TANDEM

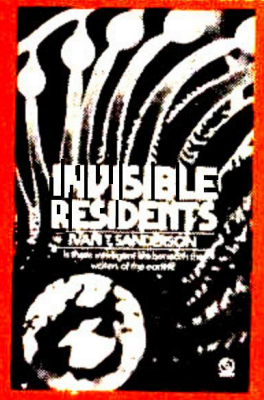
A BRILLIANT INVESTIGATION OF THE UFO MYSTERY

Man has only recently begun to explore other worlds beyond his own. At first with increasingly powerful telescopes, then with unmanned and manned spacecraft circling the alien planets, then the great breakthrough of Man landing and surviving on the surface of the Moon. And if Man can achieve this, why not some other intelligent life-form from outside our known boundaries, spending it may be millions of years in the slow, tentative exploration of this strange planet we call Earth?

There is by now reasonable evidence that something tangible is behind reports of the illuminated flying objects we call UFOs. The author of this book discusses the fascinating problem of what kind of being could be sending out these space-probes, and what their purpose may be.

UNINVITED VISITORS delves deeply into problems most scientists shy away from, and few laymen have considered.

Ivan T. Sanderson has also written

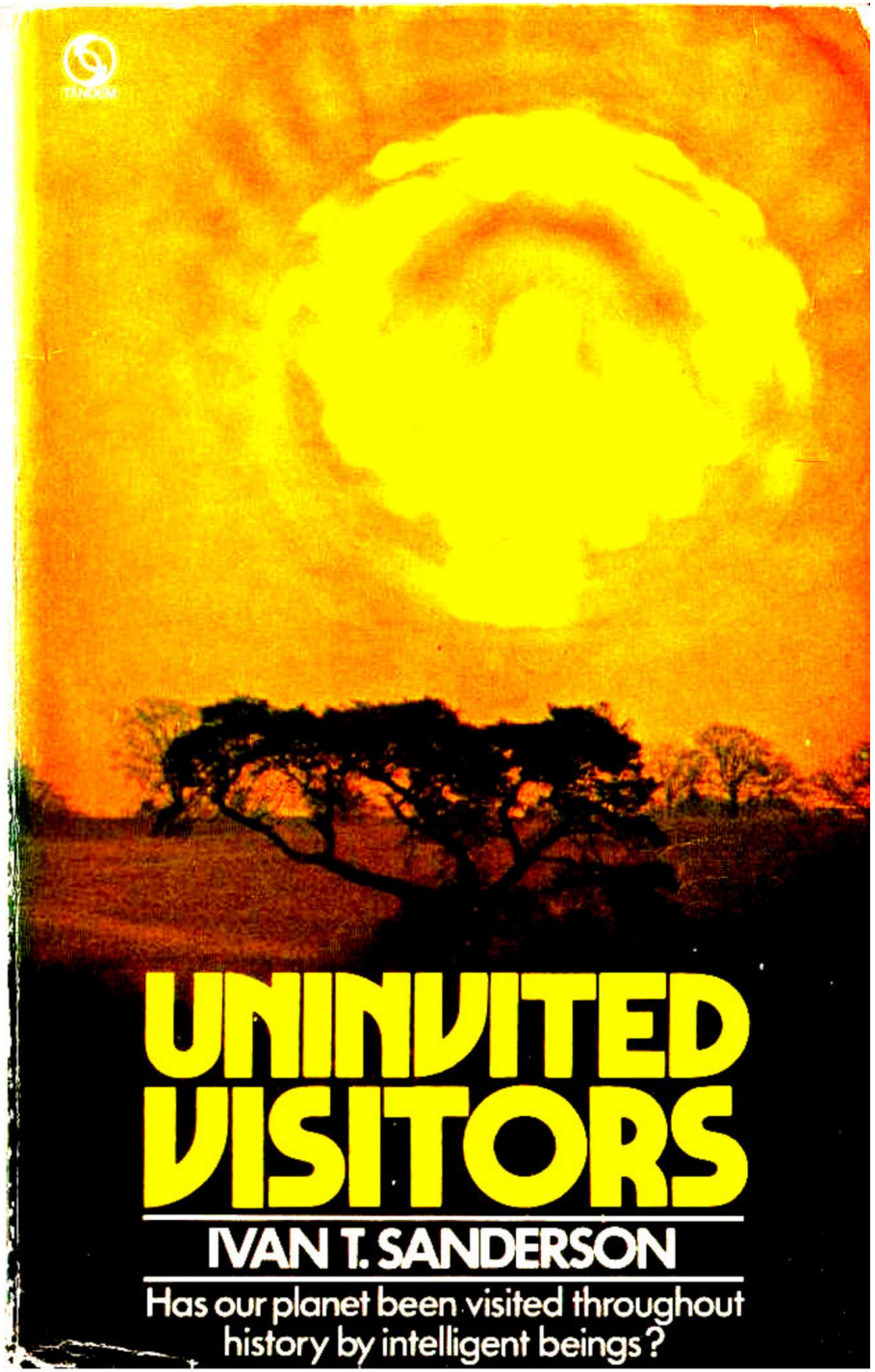


U.K.	40p
AUSTRALIA	$1.25
NEW ZEALAND	$1.25
CANADA	$1·55
MALTA	45c

SBN 426 13872 4

IVAN T. SANDERSON

TANDEM



UNINVITED VISITORS

IVAN T. SANDERSON

Has our planet been visited throughout history by intelligent beings?

TANDEM

Uninvited Visitors

'Although individual Unexplained Aerial Objects have given no indication of aggression, they may as a whole present a real threat to the security of humanity. An intelligent race of creatures may be exploring our solar system, cataloguing its content and activity.

'We now have some valid proof that this may have occurred at least once before. We do not know just what that bunch of visitors did to this world and its human inhabitants before they left, but some pretty unpleasant things appear to have happened to the earth just about that time. The pattern of their activities is exactly that which we have set up for the exploration of the moon and other heavenly bodies which we may reach. And exploration often, if not invariably, leads to exploitation.

'Might our uninvited visitors have the same thing in mind for us?'

Another book by Ivan T. Sanderson
published by Tandem

INVISIBLE RESIDENTS 40p

This book is sold subject to the condition that it shall not, by way of trade, be lent, re-sold, hired out or otherwise disposed of without the publisher's consent, in any form of binding or cover other than that in which it is published.

Uninvited Visitors

Ivan T. Sanderson

TANDEM
14 Gloucester Road, London SW7

First published in Great Britain by
Neville Spearman Ltd, 1969

Published by Universal-Tandem Publishing Co. Ltd, 1974

Copyright © Ivan T. Sanderson, 1969

Made and printed in Great Britain by
Hunt Barnard Printing Ltd, Aylesbury, Bucks.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I gratefully acknowledge a number of organizations and individuals who, on purely personal grounds, have aided me in my work for many years. These are:

Mrs June Larson, of Seattle, Washington.
Jim and Coral Lorenzen, of APRO, Tucson, Arizona.
Major Donald E. Keyhoe and Richard Hall, of NICAP, Washington, D.C.
The late Waverney Girvan, Esq., of *Flying Saucer Review*, England.
John A. Keel, of New York, freelance writer.
Hans Stefan Santesson, of New York, editor and publisher.
Walter J. McGraw, of New York, radio reporter for the Westinghouse Network, and others.
Mrs Idabel Epperson, of Los Angeles.
Michael R. Freedman, of Philadelphia, currently in the U.S. Navy.
Mr John E. Blick, of Blairstown, New Jersey.

In addition, I would like to thank numerous official departments of several governments for all the honest help that they have given me over the years. I would single out especially certain United States, Brazilian, and Swedish services.

I dedicate this work to all those sincere citizens of all countries who have been confronted by these 'things' and, for the most part, baffled by them.

I. T. S.

CONTENTS

I. WHAT COULD UFO'S BE? 9
Can science give us any satisfactory answer? And if we knew what they were, what would we do about them?

II. THINGS IN THE SKY 23
It is hard to admit, even to ourselves, the reality of something we have been led to believe does not exist.

III. A THING ON THE GROUND 39
If we cannot vouch absolutely for what we ourselves think we see, how can we confirm what others tell us?

IV. THE SHAPE AND SUBSTANCE OF UFO'S OR UAO'S 56
What forms do they take? What could they be composed of?

V. WHAT DO THEY DO? 70
The behavior of things is often a better clue to their nature than mere measurement and analysis of them.

VI. COULD UFO'S OR UAO'S BE ALIVE? 94
Just what do we mean by life – and what forms can it take? Perhaps the line between animate and inanimate is more shadowy than we thought.

VII. OTHER STRANGE THINGS COME DOWN FROM THE SKY 114
What besides UFO's or UAO's come down out of the sky? Do any of these things indicate life elsewhere?

VIII. OUR UNINVITED VISITORS 129
Are there life-forms indigenous to space? If so, what could they be made of? Or, are UFO's or UAO's evidence of intelligent life elsewhere in the universe?

IX. AND MORE UNINVITED VISITORS! 154
People have reported seeing space craft with occupants. What are the occupants said to look like and do?

X. WHERE DO THEY COME FROM? HOW? 170
Where could intelligent extraterrestrials come from, and how could they get here?

XI. WHEN DID THEY START COMING AND WHY? 179
Is there evidence that occupants of UFO's or UAO's visited us in the past?

XII. A CONCEPT OF COSMIC EVOLUTION 198
Does metamorphosis provide the key to unlock the secret of UAO's and UFO's?

Appendix A – OUTLINE OF UFO AND UAO HYPOTHESES 209

Appendix B – WORLDWIDE UFOLOGICAL ORGANIZATIONS 216

Appendix C – THE JESSUP CASE 219

BIBLIOGRAPHY 236

CHAPTER I

What Could UFO's Be?

Human beings take a long time to accept anything new. Assuming that we, as human beings, evolved over some three million years and arose with an ever-increasing intelligence from a long line of less complex life forms, we have displayed, on our time scale at least, a rather slow and very hesitant progress in gaining knowledge of our environment. New concepts are few and far between, and their acceptance comes slowly.

The development of intelligence, which is nothing more than an enhanced appreciation of the realities around us, was a gradual process – and a very gradual one, at that. However, it seems that, once started, it developed by geometrical progression – slow to start but gathering momentum the longer it continued, until today knowledge is leaping ahead by the four-times-four-times-four-forever rate.

Our acceptance of any new concept always seems to pass through three phases: At first, it is declared impossible. Then, as supporting facts accumulate, their interpretation is said to be erroneous. But finally, everybody says blandly, 'We knew it all the time.'

A classic example is the history of our understanding of meteorites. Since the time of the Stone Age, simple folk were convinced of the fact that not only stones but hunks of metal from time to time fell from the sky. Several of these hunks of metal were preserved and worshiped by even quite advanced peoples as manifestations of supernatural powers or forces. Iron meteorites were preserved in the temple at Ephesus in Asia Minor in ancient Greek times, and at

Medina in Arabia centuries before the time of Mohammed. However, when man first tried to organise knowledge on what we call a 'scientific' basis, his then current logic decreed that the idea of stones falling from the sky was to be rejected, on the seemingly logical grounds that, since there are no stones in the sky, none can fall from there!

Today, we may smile at such reasoning. But let us not forget that true knowledge only comes slowly, and our capacity to absorb it grows even more slowly. At the same time, man is a great 'believer', but unfortunately for the most part not on logical grounds, and also perhaps unfortunately for him, reality is no respecter of beliefs. Nature, life, and the universe just go evenly on, no matter what man believes at any point. Thus, when stones persisted in falling from the sky, the beliefs of many people were terribly shaken. Now, similarly, other things that in a sense may be said to 'fall from the sky' have finally created a comparable situation. I am referring, of course, to the things that have now become popularly known as UFO's, or Unidentified Flying Objects.

Like meteorites, these things appear also to have been 'coming down out of the sky' since time immemorial. They too were for thousands of years quite acceptable to humanity at large and were also sometimes worshiped. But they likewise were relegated to the limbo of impossibility when we started trying to patternise and formalise our environment in conformity with our beliefs, and for the same seemingly logical reasons.

Then, about twenty years ago, people started pointing out that, despite whatever beliefs anybody might have about this matter, unidentified objects continued to appear in our sky. Sciencedom (which is to say the established body of professional science and technology) was forced to accede to this fact. But most scientists made it quite clear that they felt all reports on such things were misinterpretations of other accepted facts. However, since no satisfactory explanations of these misinterpretations were forthcoming, they are finally being forced into the third phase of acceptance ('we knew it all the time').

In this regard, the name of one man should certainly go down in history – that of Dr J. Allen Hynek, Professor of Astronomy at Northwestern University, who, after nearly twenty years of scientific study of UFO's on behalf of the U.S. Air Force, publicly announced before a special hearing of the House Armed Services Committee that, in his opinion, the study of UFO's has been grossly neglected by scientists, and that it not only warrants, but demands, most urgent attention. And more recently, in line with Hynek's startling expression, the Department of Defense handed the whole matter over to the scientists, with a grant for setting up a research project under the aegis of the famous physicist, Dr Edward U. Condon.

The question is: Will the scientists led by this new organisation come up with any *satisfactory* answers?

Actually, while a perfectly legitimate question, this is somewhat meaningless until certain other questions have been answered. Are the scientists going to ask themselves what these things *could* be? Or are they going to confine their inquiries to research on what already has been reported? Just how broad a view of the possibilities are they going to take?

A serious cause for doubt arises from the fact that the scientists Dr Condon has assembled are either, like himself, physicists, or they are, of all things, human psychologists, which is to say psychologists studying *human* behavior. If, as I believe the evidence shows, this whole business of UFO's is a *biological* matter, then natural phenomena within the province of the physicist – such as plasma balls, swamp gas, hot-air inversion, and 'fireballs' – automatically drop out of the picture. I believe that what the scientists are now going to investigate is basically a biological matter simply because either *some* UFO's – and please note this qualifying word – are themselves life-forms, or they are all machines. If they are machines, they must have been made by a life-form, though not necessarily an intelligent one, as we shall see. And this brings up some further questions.

Most of us, especially in this country, have an almost

childish belief that there is an answer to everything, and we even more erroneously believe that there can be but one answer. But life is enormously complex and complicated. The universe is infinite; the number of universes may also be infinite. Thus, the number of possible answers to any problem may also be infinite.

Science, which the dictionary defines as the pursuit of knowledge, proceeds by three major stages – the *What?*, the *How?*, and the *Why?* Put in other terms, this means that first there is a collecting stage that leads to a classification system. Second, a period of testing replicates observed facts with a view to establishing theories as to how the facts should be organised. Finally, we inevitably ask, 'Why?'

There is another way of putting this that is today regarded as rather old-fashioned but which is still quite valid. It goes as follows: You can't know anything to be a fact until you have proved it. You can't prove it until you have tested it. You can't test it until you know what you are testing. You can't test anything until you have found it. And, you can't find anything until you know what you are looking for.

In other words, the pursuit of knowledge starts with *imagination*, proceeds to *search*, which should give rise to *research* upon which an *hypothesis* may be erected. From hypotheses come *theories*, which in turn have to be tested – that is, reduplicated, on demand, by experiment – before they can be proved. Only then can any fact or body of facts be accepted with any degree of assurance. Now, you will doubtless say, and quite rightly, where does this lead us with these phenomena?

So far, in regard to UFO's, we are dealing with nothing but reports. Thus, we are still in the collecting stage, or that of the *What?* Nevertheless, this does not mean that we have nothing more to do than analyse reports. If we had waited until we 'captured' an electron, we would never even have suspected that they exist. It is perfectly permissible both to apply pure imagination and to erect hypotheses about anything: and it has been our failure to do so in the case of UFO's that has held back the whole inquiry so long. Dr

Hynek rightly stated in a letter to the magazine *Science* that men of imagination must open their minds to the cosmic possibilities implied by the observation of this natural phenomenon, so that we may proceed to the vital question *How?* If we fail to do this, we will probably never even conclude the *What?* phase of our inquiry.

A politician once made the pontifical statement that 'words should convey meaning'. We all tend to endorse this pronouncement but to miss its true significance. 'Emerging man' – if I may borrow a phrase – undoubtedly mumbled at his confreres in croaks and whistles, as do baboons, and communicated by hand gestures, eyelid blinking, and other such means as are noted among other higher primates. As his awareness of his environment enlarged, however, he found a need for more complex expressions and for more refined means of transmitting these to his cohorts. Language was the result. This was a splendid innovation, but once started, led to complications. The more hominids learned, and the more they wished to communicate, the more complicated the whole business became until today we find ourselves virtually bogged down in a linguistic morass. Just consider for a moment that some 50,000 words are said to have been added to the English language between 1938 and 1948 alone. And these words just to cover scientific and technological advances!

When we are first faced with a new field of knowledge, we find ourselves literally speechless. We just don't have the vocabulary to handle it. But, being the ingenious creatures we are, we immediately set about creating a whole new lexicon. And this has already happened in the case of these phenomena of which we speak: a whole new vocabulary has been established. Moreover, it has become rather complex. We have entered an age where alphabetisation – the use of abbreviation by initials – has become necessary merely to conserve paper, if for no other reason. With respect to our special subject, therefore, the current state of its special vocabulary must be put on record before we go any further.

First comes the matter of the proper title for the whole

business. Unknown objects in the sky have been recorded since the inception of history, and described by a long string of varied names. The earliest civilised people who left records of these things usually referred to them either in animistic or religious terms, designating them gods or manifestations of God. Later, they were thought of as auguries or portents of one kind or another.

In what we call the Dark Ages and Middle Ages in Europe, the objects were usually referred to as omens – first of a religious nature but later as sort of sports of Nature.

In the opening phases of the modern scientific age – the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries – they were blandly listed as meteorites or fireballs. Then finally, just after the turn of this century, a remarkable man named Charles Fort took a completely new slant on the matter and rather delightfully named them OSF's – or Objects Seen Floating – in the sky. This designation is probably the best ever coined, but it never caught on popularly for the very simple reason that few people ever heard of Fort, read his works or, if they did, took them seriously.

Thus matters rested until 1947 when an Idaho businessman named Kenneth Arnold, who owned his own plane, happened to be flying in the region of Mt Rainier in search of a downed military plane. There he encountered a group of aerial objects maneuvering at low altitude in bright sunlight. He reported this to the appropriate authorities, and the matter reached the ears of the press. Interviewed by reporters, he happened to remark that the method of progression of these objects through the air could be likened to that of a saucer skipped across the surface of a pond. Immediately, the ridiculous term 'flying saucer' was born. Like so many other monikers, this was a complete misnomer from the first, for the objects themselves were, according to Mr Arnold, in no way shaped like a saucer but were lens-shaped or circular ellipsoids. (Incidentally, the shapes of these objects appear to be almost, if not quite, endless, but the one shape that has never yet been reported is that of a saucer!)

Within a year after Mr Arnold made his report, the

government took cognisance of the matter and, it being an aerial affair, tossed it to the then U.S. Army Air Force. A project to study it was set up and named 'Bluebook', and somewhere along the line, the items to be studied were designated *Unidentified Flying Objects.* This gave us the alphabetised abbreviation, UFO's.

While the press and public continued to call these things 'flying saucers' for many years, slowly the U.S. Air Force's term UFO was adopted generally. From that arose 'ufology', which was very early claimed as a science, and the designation 'ufologist' for those seriously interested in the subject and having some training in scientific or technological methodologies that might have some bearing on the matter.

At the same time, another whole category of persons emerged. These persons claimed to know what UFO's were: UFO's were manned space craft piloted by benign space people who had contacted them. According to these persons, the space people were here to tell us of all manner of impending disasters or utopias. These persons became known as 'contactees'.

The contactees made a tremendous amount of noise, and not a little money, lecturing on their alleged experiences and spreading the gospel, despite the fact that not one of them ever produced any substantial proof that anything they said was based on reality or actuality.

Rather naturally the contactees also led the press, the public at large, and, it seems, the government to take a dim view of the whole business and to regard it as nothing more than some crackpot outburst of postwar hysteria. The actions of these people certainly confirmed the scientific establishment in its already expressed opinion that the whole field of ufology was complete nonsense. The study of these phenomena has suffered greatly as a result.

In the public mind, even serious-minded investigators were put into the general category of crackpots. These serious-minded inquirers sought neither the publicity nor the profits that the contactees did. They were mostly scientists and technologists, or writers and editors. They formed some

hard-core organisations, the first of which named itself Civilian Saucer Intelligence, or CSI, of New York (now disbanded), and the longest-lasting is the Aerial Phenomena Research Organisation, or APRO, of Tucson, Arizona, inspired and maintained by L. J. and Coral Lorenzen. The other most prominent in this country – and by far the most active, aggressive, and vocal – is the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena, or NICAP, of Washington, D.C. NICAP was taken over in 1954 by Major Donald E. Keyhoe, U.S. Marines, Ret., a pilot and onetime member of the Civil Aeronautics Board (CAB). There are a number of serious-minded organisations of long standing in other countries (a list of which is included in Appendix B).

All these organisations (with the exception of APRO), the world press, and most air forces continue to call *all* the aerial phenomena UFO's. However, this is almost as much a misnomer as the absurd 'flying saucers', on two counts. First, none of these objects *fly* as do birds, airplanes, or even rockets, but they do just about everything else! Second, the general term UFO's covers two quite separate things: (1) *objects* and (2) *phenomena.*

Thus, the objects may be properly designated as UAO's or *Unexplained Aerial Objects.* In other words, they are material things, the nature of which has not yet been explained.

On the other hand, there are reports of many phenomena – other than objects – in the sky. These phenomena range in variety from which we can only call diaphanous entities to things that manifest themselves in ways other than the visual. These may be designated as UAP's, or *Unidentified Atmospheric Phenomena.*

In this book we are going to deal primarily with the material objects, or UAO's, though we will find ourselves rather frequently forced to allude to UAP's. With UAO's we may be able to do something along current scientific lines; with UAP's we are in much greater trouble because, although they are in many respects more amenable to investigation by the machinery at our disposal, they seem

to involve forces with which we are not at this time able to cope. UAP's are, in fact, quite another story.

So what are UAO's?

The best way to begin is by rephrasing the initial question – 'What are they?' – and asking instead, 'What *could* they be?' Now, this being a question of possibility, it could, presumably, be debated forever. It is, however, an ontological question; and so the best way to tackle it is along the old, tried and true principle of dichotomy – that is, by asking ourselves a number of simple, alternate questions, such as:

'Could these things be dead or alive?' 'Could they be natural or artificial?' and so forth.

Any such questioning becomes hopelessly involved unless you put it down on paper in the form of a simple chart.

Here is such a chart of: *What Could They Be?*

I. *INANIMATE*
- A. *Natural*
  1. Nonmaterial – energy packets, as in bolides
  2. Nonsolid – gaseous, as in clouds
  3. Solid – like meteorites
- B. *Artificial*
  1. Self-contained items – like artificial satellites
  2. Transports – like freighters
  3. Auxiliary devices (manned) – like airplanes
  4. Auxiliary devices (robotic) – like space probes
  5. Missiles – like bullets and ICBM's

II. *ANIMATE*
- A. *Natural*
  1. Life-forms indigenous to space
  2. Life-forms indigenous to atmospheres
  3. Life-forms indigenous to solid bodies
- B. *Artificial*
  1. Domesticated natural life-forms
  2. Genetically created life-forms
  3. Biochemically created life-forms

(For a fuller classification of the myriad possibilities of UAO's and UFO's see Appendix A.)

We may define 'natural' objects as things that have not been made deliberately by other things – and thus are not what we call constructions. What is more, we cannot, it must be understood, assume that things or entities that 'make' things must be 'intelligent'. This need not be the case at all, because mere tentacled blobs of jelly 'manufacture' beautiful corals, and amorphous miniscule globs of protein create the most exquisite, geometrical perfections that we call Foraminifera, Radiolarians, and such. Are, in fact, these corals and the shells of protozoan animals artificial?

If some UAO's are natural (not manufactured by other entities), then they are of no concern whatsoever to us. If they are bolides (exploding meteors), funny clouds, meteors, meteorites, ball lightning, hot-air inversions, mirages, or swamp gas, they are *not* UAO's, but what Dr Hynek and others have so rightly called IFO's, or *Identified Flying Objects*. We are not concerned with astronomical, meteorological, chemical, or optical phenomena. Thus we may be done with the entire lot classified as Inanimate-Natural in the preceding chart.

The second category of inanimate objects, which are classed as artificial, presents us, on the other hand, with quite different problems. The very concept of their being 'manufactured' implies that some life-form, and probably one with what we call intelligence, was involved in their creation. The five types of such independent or 'discrete' objects that could come into our atmosphere are listed in the chart under Inanimate–Artificial.

Now, it will be noted that we terrestrial humans have already devised prototypes of all these in the forms noted in that chart. If we have been able to do all this in the mere half-century since we launched the first heavier-than-air machine, other intelligent entities could have done the same – and at any time that they first reached the present level of our own development. The fact that we have these prototypes has mightily clouded the whole problem of UAO's

because we, in our overbearing self-esteem, have until recently assumed that we are God's only effort in the department of intelligence and ingenuity and that, therefore, we alone could have achieved so much. Thus, if a report of an alleged UAO could not be identified as some natural inanimate object, it was almost invariably explained away as a case of mistaken identity – which is to say, a simple failure to identify one of our own devices of the Inanimate–Artificial category. But this, be it noted, is nonetheless already the second stage of acceptance of anything new.

When we turn to Category II – that is animate, or 'alive' – we encounter something else again. This is a totally different concept and one that is quite alien to the Western mind of materialism, engineering, and gadgetry. It is the biological world – the world of life. And, this is a world that we are only just beginning to probe and fathom. Life, and especially intelligent life, is, to the mechanistic world, an oddity; in some ways an anachronism, and in many ways a pest. It does not subscribe to the neat little laws and principles of physics, and its chemistry is at first sight all awry. It has its own mechanics, and it tails off into the hazy and, to a physicist, illogical netherworld of mentality where there appear to be quite different sets of rules. This is most disturbing even to most biologists. The very idea of an animated machine or of a mechanical animal is impossible to conceive by the average person. Even the mathematician stands aghast at some of the things that life does.

When the average person is asked to contemplate 'life" he immediately thinks of an animal, and of life as being an estate in which entities exist as we do. As one highly intelligent, literary man with solid scientific training put it to me when discussing exobiology, 'Oh, you mean born like we are, and all that.' The average person hardly considers even plants as being 'alive', and the much vaster world of protozoans and protogeans is to them as 'dead' or inanimate as are rocks and crystals. Yet life is everywhere and there is even more than a hint that everything may be alive – even electrons, our planet, and the universe itself.

To define life today is well-nigh impossible, and it may be the only true and ultimate impossibility. There are viruses that are animate in one generation and inanimate in the next. There are highly complex organisms distantly related to spiders that can be desiccated to crystallisation and then 'come back to life' – and at our wish – simply by being doused with water. There is even evidence that every 'thing' has some degree of 'volition' – an attribute that we had until recently thought to be the prerogative only of life-forms. The variety of life-forms found even on this, our own, tiny, insignificant planet is so great that mere contemplation of some of them is almost more than a biologist can stand. What forms life could take elsewhere is quite beyond the grasp of our materialist outlook, because their variety is probably infinite.

Why, then, all the excitement over the mild suggestion that there could be life-forms indigenous to what we call space, or to the upper, more rarefied atmospheres of planets and other astronomical bodies, including our own? The idea may make physicists, chemists, engineers, and even biologists uneasy, but there is nothing illogical, irrational, or even improbable about it. In fact, it is so probable that it must be given first rank in consideration of the question, 'What could UAO's be?' And this brings us to the troublesome thought of unknown life-forms indigenous to our earth.

This is, frankly, a point that I would have preferred to dispense with entirely. However, on the grounds of mere honesty, let alone consistency and logic, it must at least be considered. It falls into two parts, one more weird than the other. The two suggestions are – and they have been made repeatedly throughout history, and by all manner of people – that hidden, unseen, or seldom-seen creatures that can soar into the sky dwell either (1) under the earth, in natural or constructed caves, and/or (2) on the bottoms of seas and oceans.

The former notion involves wild, esoteric beliefs in lost subterranean civilisations with outlets to the surface of the earth by various 'Open Sesame'-type doors; with trolls,

witches, and little creatures called Deros who are supposed to live deep inside the earth; with fairies, pixies, and pookas who can walk into solid hills. This is a world of myth and belief in which you can lose your mind, and is, for that very reason, a serious menace to any proper investigation of the UAO problem.

The other suggestion, that of a submarine origin for UAO's, is of quite another ilk. At first it sounds equally wacky, but there is a really surprising amount of 'evidence' – and from many different sources, some of them strictly scientific – that forces one to at least consider the suggestion quite seriously. The degree of possibility here is really rather high, for there is an unexpectedly large number of mariners and others intimately connected with the sea who have asserted that objects of an unidentified nature not only dwell in the oceans but are seen to enter them from, and rise from them into, the atmosphere.

Finally, we come to classification II – B, or Animate – Artificial. This is the category that almost everybody gags on, and not only because of the efforts of the science-fiction writers with their clanking robots and indestructible androids. The idea of animated machines and/or mechanical 'animals' is almost too much to ask even a sophisticated biologist to consider. But, I would point out that, what with the computer designers on the one hand, and the biochemists who are investigating the chemistry of genetics on the other, we are on the threshold of just such a world if we are not already in it. Let us shed some of our traditional beliefs and sit down to contemplate seriously and try to understand this, to us, fantastic world. Now the stage is set for our inquiry.

But, this setting is probably quite other than that which you expected for, instead of launching upon a voyage into the outer world of cosmology, physics, mechanics, and space-travel, we find that we are already searching in the even more complex world of *life*. In fact, since Inanimate Natural objects are of no interest or concern to us, our whole inquiry becomes of a *biological* nature, for even artificial

inanimate objects – that is, machines and other constructions are an expression of life, and are quite meaningless of themselves except as gadgets used by other life-forms. And this, I personally contend, is the crux of the *whole* ufological problem, because many UAP's as well as the UAO's seem to display features of animation, volition, and control of intelligence. Today, not only are we on our first (physical) leg into space, we are about to learn our first true lesson about life. Thus, by asking the simple question, 'What could UFO's be?' we find that we have opened a sort of Pandora's box of further questions, each of which will be taken up in the subsequent chapters.

CHAPTER II

Things in the Sky

During World War II, I was engaged in counter-espionage duties in the Caribbean and thereabouts, employing my own schooner. The Nazis had become outrageously bold, surfacing submarines in daylight to do their laundry, and signaling each other and their chums ashore by searchlights at night. The Nazi shore parties set up ingenious devices with battery-powered lights of various colors. Finding and reporting them was a tough job, even though a sailing vessel is quieter than a powered one. The tracking down and reporting of lights, and notably *green* lights, developed into a sort of nightmare – due, however, to something quite unforeseen.

I first became cognisant of this mysterious unforeseen element through one of our own intelligence reports. A contingent of British troops that happened to be in Jamaica had been rushed to the island of Curaçao to protect the oil refineries there after the fall of the Netherlands. These British troops were marching eight abreast along a blacktop road circling the inner lagoon of the island, after dark, to billets around the oil refinery. Suddenly a beautiful, perfect sphere about 2 feet in diameter, glowing with an intense peacock-green light, came down rather slowly out of the starry heavens and bounced along the road ahead of the ranks. It skittered along ahead, just a little out of reach. After some maneuvering, the officer in command appears to have ordered some sort of charge (with or without fixed bayonets, the report, unfortunately, did not say). But the green ball danced out of the way and ducked into a culvert. Troops were deployed immediately and some luckless ones

ordered to enter the open ends of the culvert. One party was slower than the other so that just as they reached their end the sphere popped out, streaked silently into the sky, and vanished.

The next incident I personally observed. It happened off the coast of Nicaragua, as we were sailing south inside the Pearl Cays. It was such a night as one can witness only in the tropics, without moon but with stars so bright you could almost read. We had a fair breeze from the north and had winged our main and foresails and were scudding silently along like a square-rigger. We were four aboard – my wife, our captain, and a young man from Honduras who, alone in the whole Caribbean, it seemed, could make our temperamental engine start. I relieved my wife on watch at midnight, and she retired below. The wheel was lashed, and as we were dead on course in blue water, I lay on my back just looking at the stars, while the spume hissed along the hull. The captain emerged from the after hatch and joined me in silence. We got to talking about navigation in general and thus the stars above. The captain held a Master's certificate but did all our navigation with a school atlas, a 16-foot bamboo pole for taking soundings around reefs, and an ancient binnacle that was later found to be some 16 points off. Otherwise he used the stars for direction and his sense of smell to detect land. And he never failed!

I had been watching a particularly bright star and asked the captain casually which it could be, as it seemed brighter than a planet. On looking where I pointed, he stared for a long time in silence. Then he jumped for the binoculars and after taking a quick look, handed them to me.

While I watched the star it got bigger. What is more, it continued to do so at an ever-increasing rate. In no time at all it was the size of a quarter, then of a soup plate and seemed to light up the entire world. We instinctively ducked.

Then it 'exploded' and more than a minute passed before we could even see the binnacle light. I say exploded, but there was no sound. Before it became terrifying, it was the most beautiful object I have ever seen, perfectly spherical,

and shaded to show the sphericity from intense green to deep peacock blue all around its edge. I reported this one.

The result was an official reply that arrived in the form of a terse cable for decoding, from the absolute top chaps of my service in London. Even if security had permitted me to keep a copy, which I would have sorely liked to do, I would still be forced to paraphrase. It went something like this: 'To No. xxxx; From ————. Kindly desist, repeat, desist, reporting green lights and other aerial phenomena, and proceed with assigned duties.' There was a rider, permissible to use up the cipher allotment. It was from a personal friend. He added: 'There's a war on, you know.' Corny but rather aggravating when one was chasing submarines with an unarmed schooner.

The significance of this terse communication was not lost on us, and it caused me much greater alarm than a mere rap over the knuckles. My trouble was, as you may have already perceived, that there did not any longer seem to be any way of distinguishing between enemy signal lights and certain 'natural' ones. I had, of course, heard of bolides, so that the object I had witnessed off the coast of Nicaragua, though rather unusual to say the least, had been more or less acceptable to me as a natural scientist. However, the incident reported from Curaçao displayed aspects that were not at all acceptable, and moreover, these were the very characteristics of so many of the green lights that we had been chasing. The most disturbing fact was that they displayed intelligent control! They actually played tag with aircraft that we sent to investigate them.

Now, animal light happened to have been one of my specialities when my job was collecting animals for zoos and museums, which had been my profession for a number of years prior to the war. So I was well acquainted with the behaviour of animals that create light, both in the sea and in the air (fireflies, for example). But none of these animals larger than the microscopic luminous bacteria are globular in form and none, of course, are anything like the size of the things we had seen.

If these things were inanimate like bolides, they would just go straight ahead. If they were St Elmo's fire or will-o'-the-wisps, they might go off and on and duck about, but I had never heard of any such natural phenomenon actually playing tag with people as the Curaçao specimen had, and literally dozens of others had with us. Not only did these things maneuver, they made sudden stops and starts and inexplicable angular turns. What is more, among the cays and islands they behaved exactly as did the Nazi signalers, even blinking in complex phased rhythms so that we had at first become convinced we were on to some kind of code. Finally, we experienced them both coming down from the sky and going up into it, and apparently at unbelievable speeds to boot. So, 'proceed with assigned duties' we did, but not entirely to the exclusion of green lights, though I never again reported the latter.

I will now skip a quarter of a century, and several other incidents which I will describe later, in order to maintain a sequence or progression in kind rather than in time. My interest in this subject started with those mysterious green lights, so I would like to pursue this aspect of the phenomena first and show how it led me to an appreciation of many other things and, I believe, some semblance of understanding of their signficance. I shall give you the details of the next incident in the form of an exact transcript of a report I made to the U.S. Air Force, because one cannot and should not rely on memory in cases of this nature. First, though, I must explain the circumstances.

My assistant, Michael R. Freedman, and I were returning to my farm which was also our place of business, from our local village in Warren County, New Jersey, about 8 o'clock on a beautiful clear evening in September. We had been to pick up two puppies from the vet's and took a back road going south that crests the highest of several ridges which then descend like steps to our little valley. Suddenly Mike shouted, 'What on earth is that?' I stopped, peered ahead, and immediately realised that Mike's choice of phrase would have much better been couched as, 'What *out of this world*

is that?' We sat gaping, and what we observed was reported as follows:

Report
To : McGuire AFB
From : Ivan T. Sanderson and Michael R. Freedman
Date : 25th September, 1965
File : Inf-VII-H-3
Subject: Twin Unidentified Aerial Objects over Allentown, Pa.

While proceeding south along a township road in Warren County known as the Blairstown–Delaware Road (between Lake Susquehanna and the fork between said road and the Mt Herman Road and the Delaware-Knowlton Road) at precisely 8:15 p.m., EDT, I and my assistant simultaneously observed an aerial phenomenon that caused us to pull off the road.

The place of observation was precisely at the point on the U.S. Dept of the Interior Geological Survey map (Portland Quadrangle: New Jersey–Pennsylvania) 7.5 Minute Series Topographic; 1955 (AMS 5965 I NE – SERIES V822). This point comes out at approximately 40° 56′ 30″ North, and 75° 00′ 30″ West. (Exact location marked on *our* Topo. map.)

Said objects were estimated to be at about SW-by S; estimated 30 degrees elevation, and apparently some 25 miles distant – due to their subsequent behavior, relative to the Blue Ridge and Kittatinny Mountains that form a 'barrier' to the west of the point of observation. This would place said objects over the Phillipsburg-Easton-Allentown complex. *Duration of observation:* Approximately five (5) minutes. *Description:* Occurred after sun had set; many stars bright. Observed, straight ahead of us, a very bright, *red* light (or object) at low altitude. We had been remarking on the extraordinary brightness of the planet (Venus?) in the same sector, when this *much brighter object* suddenly appeared slightly to the right, or west, of it. Sky cloudless and visibility very good.

This solid-appearing, bright red object was 'flashing' on and off, not – we would stress – 'pulsing'.

Within a few seconds, said object divided into two equal portions which proceeded to move diametrically away from each other to (from our point of view) the east and the west.

Both continued bright red, and to flash with a regular rhythm, off-and-on, at about two flashes per second.

Behavior: This was totally different in the case of each object. While trying to watch both, my associate concentrated on the one going (apparently) east, while I concentrated on that going (apparently) west. The behavior was as follows:

(1) Going east: The object continued to flash red, on and off without any diminution of brightness. It traveled more or less directly east, maintaining altitude, and then passed behind some trees and a bright aura of lights from the electric plant on the Delaware River between Columbia and Manunka Chunk, N.J. (toward Belvidere, N.J., on Route 46, going east).

(2) Going west: This (portion) of the UAO performed in an entirely different manner.

(a) First, it traveled (apparently, to us) horizontally, due west, continuing to flash at regular intervals, its light being a bright red – (primary red, at that).

(b) However, its speed far surpassed any plane we have seen or know about, since it traversed at least 60° in not more than 30 seconds, from over the lowlands towards Easton, Pa. (SW of us) to behind, and then manifestly beyond, the Blue Ridge Mountains, that border the south of the Delaware Water Gap, west of us.

(c) This object then performed some remarkable gyrations, and each time it maneuvered, its still-flashing light changed from red to a vivid *white*. Said gyrations – or, rather, angular turns – were extremely rapid and sudden.

(d) After making these 'moves', the object headed south away from us, diminishing in size and brightness. However, about two minutes later it appeared again, some way to our left (i.e., to the east); increased rapidly in brightness and then veered off to the east; and vanished in very rapid order.

Appraisal: Definitely not a planet or a star, since a known planet and many stars were clearly visible and in their appointed places. A high speed aircraft? Definitely *not*, because no craft that we have heard of can make between 90 to 180 degree turns instantly. Even at 5,000 miles per hour, nothing could have covered the distance No. 2 UAO did in that time – and that it did so is manifest from its disappearance *behind* the Blue Ridge Mountains and subsequent almost instantaneous appearance beyond them, as seen through the Delaware Water Gap. Further, it could not possibly have been an aircraft anti-collision beacon, as the size of the beacon would have had to be several hundreds of feet in diameter in order to appear in the manner which it did. Balloons? No. And what could be the explanation for the initial separation of one large, red, flashing body into two flashing bodies that traveled in exactly opposite directions?

(End Report)

Naturally having given you green lights and then red lights, I would have liked next to have been able to introduce you to an amber one. But I have to state that the next one was white – but what a white! I don't know if there is any way to grade whiteness once you have got all the yellow and blue out of it, but I have certainly never seen anything as white as this before. This observation was made by five of us from my farm itself, to which we had just returned from a late dinner at a neighborhood restaurant, and occurred just about a year later.

Again I give the details in the form of transcript of our report written that evening:

Report

Date : 31st July, 1966

Location: 40° 57′ N. × 75° 2′ W. Polkville, Warren County, N.J.

Time : 10:30 p.m. New Jersey Daylight Saving Time.

Weather : Cloudless sky; exceptionally clear. Some heat scintillation to about 30 degrees above horizon.

Moon : Full; slightly south of east; elevation approx. 50°

Present : Miss E.C., Mr H.U.L. (electronics design engineer), Mr John A. Keel (author), Mr Edgar O. Schoenenberger (businessman), Ivan T. Sanderson.

We were seated in low garden chairs about 25 feet behind the house, which runs from northeast to southwest (long axis). Knowing the height of the ridge of the lower, single-story portion, as well as that of the two-story section, and the exact position of the seat in which Miss E.C. was sitting, we were able to calculate the position of both the moon and the 'object' when first seen.

An attempt was made to calculate the elevation and thus the true height of the object when it finally dropped below a line of trees forming the northwestern horizon from the point of observation, but this proved not worthwhile without doing a chain and compass traverse of about half a mile of ungraded, swampy, wooded land and then measuring the height of the trees to within 2 feet. We did not feel that the effort was worthwhile in view of the gross effects on the accuracy that would result from any of a large number of possible small miscalculations in such a survey.

What actually happened was as follows: The four of us – Miss E.C., H.U.L., John Keel, and I had returned to my home at about 10:00 p.m. As it was a very warm night, we sat out in the garden, talking. Suddenly Miss E.C.,

who might be described as a tolerant skeptic of the whole UAO bit but who had been listening to the rest of us discussing the matter over dinner, pointed to the peak of the two-story part of the house and exclaimed in what can only be called horrified tones, 'What's that?'

The moon was full and roughly in the same direction but just above the roof ridge and slightly to the right. It was extremely bright due to the clear night, so the stars were not visible to the naked eye for some distance around it. Yet, directly in this moonshine a large, much brighter, light was moving slowly out from behind the roof.

Our first reaction, perhaps naturally, was that it was a planet but, taking a steady fix on it relative to the roof peak, we immediately realised that it was moving too fast for any astronomical body *and* in a (from our point of view) north-easterly direction to boot.

I ran into the house to fetch a pair of 7 × 50 binoculars, and with these we all saw immediately that this vivid white light was in fact a solid body, or at least had a very definite outline of considerable proportions. While the others were using the binoculars, I returned to the house and brought out an FMC Balscope with turret and three eyepieces (15×, 20×, and 30×). This instrument is fitted with ball and socket pedestal and a screw-clamp, so we attached it to the back of a heavy, firmly seated bench and focused it on the object – moving from low to high power. The Balscope also has an extensible lens hood that aided greatly in eliminating the moonshine.

Using this instrument, we saw that the object was a perfect oval in shape – *not* a sphere, an ovoid, a lens, nor cigar-shaped. At this point Edgar O. Schoenenberger drove up on to the lawn at the back of the house where we had been sitting. He confirmed what we thought we had seen without prompting from any of us.

The object proceeded very slowly and apparently in a straight line, taking in all 22 minutes to travel (as viewed by us) from its emergence from behind the roof of the house to the tops of the trees on our horizon, an angle of

104 degrees. During the last few minutes of visibility it either entered or was seen through heat waves rising from the baked earth (we were in the middle of a drought, and the earth surface was retaining and evaporating considerable heat for several hours after dark), and began to scintillate in all colors of the spectrum as was to be expected.

(End Report)

The first reaction to this observation by persons other than those present was that it must have been a man-made satellite. We have so far been unable to find anybody who can work out the exact line of travel of this object despite our rather precise sightings on it and exact ground measurements, height of the house and of the trees from behind which and beyond which it passed, and the exact time for its transit. This seems odd in view of the alleged precision of satellite tracking. At the same time, we have been unable to ascertain if any satellite was due at that time on that date and traveling on that trajectory, or near it, though subsequent inquiry in appropriate quarters seemed to indicate that no satellites were then traveling on a southwest-to-northeast orbit. However, not being able to estimate its distance from us or its altitude, we could not give any precise statement on its actual line of travel. It could have been a great open curve. By the compass, it first appeared to us in the sky slightly east of south. It finally went out of sight below our horizon exactly 30 degrees east of north.

H.U.L. stated that it was self-luminous and not just reflecting moonlight, and that the amount of emission far exceeded the output of anything that we could or have put aloft. It could not have been any kind of even unknown type of meteor or bolide due to its very slow rate of travel, let alone several other considerations. It was neither a plane nor a helicopter for several obvious reasons, let alone its shape and the absence of any sound accompanying it. It was not a balloon for the simple reason – which applies to planes and even satellites for that matter – that it was self-luminous

and emitting an almost incredible amount of light which would call for the expenditure of a lot more energy than can be disseminated by any plane or satellite.

I have arranged these personal experiences in this order in the hope that what comes next may be a little less shocking. Even enormous lights behaving like fireflies can be partly acceptable to those not specially interested in or trained in the natural sciences. After all, ball lighting and will-o'-the-wisps are strange enough, so that only a specialist becomes startled when something like them shows clear evidence of intelligent control. But when one is confronted with an object, rather than a mere light or ball of light thus controlled, even the scientist becomes disturbed. Having been through the experience myself, I am highly sympathetic to anybody and everybody who has observed such phenomena, and wish to assure them that it took me over twenty years both to be convinced of their existence and to throw off the ideas concerning their reality that I had been brought up with and trained in.

The shock to anyone being confronted with any of these phenomena for the first time is, I know, distressing – and more so to the scientifically trained, I have come to realise. The average nonscientist can take a ghost in his stride, but it is very hard for a scientist to do so. By the time I witnessed the two incidents that I have just recounted, I had done a lot of reading on this subject and also conducted a considerable number of investigations. Nevertheless I was shocked – and I can use no other word – when I was confronted by my first solid object in daylight. It happened this way, and again I quote verbatim from my original report:

Report
To : Research Div. C.S.I. of N.Y.
From : Ivan T. Sanderson
Date : 2nd October, 1958
Subject: Witnessed sightings of large discoidal UFO.

At approximately 5:00 p.m. I received a phone call

from a friend who had unexpectedly arrived at our local train stop – Blairstown, New Jersey – asking to be picked up. My wife and I immediately got into the car and drove off for the station. Unfortunately neither of us had wristwatches, and I have no car clock.

For the sole reason that is was such a beautiful afternoon, I took a back road from which we can always obtain a wonderful view of the Kittatinny Mts and the Delaware Water Gap. I always slow down along the straight ridge at the top of this road, for the view. This I did. The view is on the driver's side.

(1) As I did so, I glanced at the Gap and got a vague impression that there was some smoke arising from the Walnut Valley, which lies between this point and the Gap. The sky was exceptionally clear, bright, and cloudless except for some very distant (I would say, 30 miles, at a minimum) stratus on the western horizon slightly above and beyond the straight line of mountains, *but* at some height so that there was a clear area below that included the 'triangle' of the Gap. What I thought at first was a very vague, 'hollow', more or less circular 'puff' of smoke was directly between me and the Gap and therefore a little down or below me. (Point: Where we were is on a ridge that I believe is about 750 feet above sea level; the top of the Kittatinnys is, I believe, 1,200 feet, but these altitudes could be checked from a good survey.)

(2) Interested even in this mundane possibility (we are very conscious of fire in this area of frame houses), I glanced back again. Then I came to a screeching stop because, instead of a more or less formless, tenuous, 'hollow', and diaphanous 'something' there was a very definite, solid-looking ovoid ellipse. This was sort of flashing on and off, from almost total diaphaneity to complete solidity at about three flashes per second, I would say, but stayed put right over and in the Gap. I yelled to my wife, and we both jumped out of the car.

(3) Now I know why it is hard for observers to describe UFO's of this type when they see one. We were in

absolutely ideal conditions for observing the thing, except for the sun which was very bright, 26 degrees to the SW of the object and at an elevation of only about 20 to 25 degrees (this could be checked for this date, at 5:30 p.m. at a height of 750 feet a.s.l.). Nevertheless, so much took place on the part of that object within the next (I would say, from radio timing experience, not more than) 15 seconds that it is very hard to record it adequately. But let me finish the physical setup. I can pinpoint the place from which we observed the object almost to the foot, and from this point, the Delaware Water Gap forms a small triangle, with a small horizontal line of highlands beyond. On a map, one can draw a line from the point of observation through the Gap with only about a degree of leeway on either side. The UFO must have been at a minimum of 9 (nine) miles from us, and either directly over, this side of, or beyond Stroudsburg, since it *twice* went down *behind* the mountain ridge on the Pennsylvania side, to the right or north of a Firewatching tower, and came up from behind to the left or south of that tower but between it and a TV relay tower.

(4) The object was extremely large. As I have said, I at first thought it to be a large 'puff' of smoke. Next, when I looked again, I wondered if an enormous balloon might be in the process of being flown in or just beyond the Gap; but then the thing 'turned solid' (I explain below), and that was when I realised that it was of another nature. We jumped out of the car and my wife, who is a highly pragmatic person after twenty-five years with me collecting animals, was completely dumbfounded. In fact, I was amazed at her attitude, and if she had not been with me I probably would not have reported this sighting but simply recorded it. Both of us estimate that the UFO filled *one-third* of the top of the triangle of the Gap, as seen from where we were. I immediately stooped down without taking my eyes off the object and scooped up a handful of small gravel (as a dime would have been too big to compare at arm's length) and tried one small stone after

another until I got one that matched the object. This stone I have in a small corked test tube. It is 5 mm. in diameter. (I have not worked out the geometry, but with this, the minimum distance, and a good map that gives elevations, we ought to be able to estimate the rough size of the UFO.) To me, knowing the area very well, it appeared enormous.

(5) As to its 'behavior', I will do my best, as follows:
(a) I first saw it apparently rising up from the V of the Gap, like a globular smoke signal.
(b) It winked out, then appeared again in the same place but slightly ovoid and having a very solid *rim*, but remaining 'void' within – colorless.
(c) It seemed to flash on and off from almost nothing to solid black (as a perfect circle) but was overall of a dull, leaden gray color – exactly like an old and worn nickel, but without any markings.
(d) It then began a rapid series of complicated 'flip-flops', up and to the south. We could then see that it appeared solid, circular, but very thin, like a section of a cylinder (*not* a lenticle or oblate spheroid). However, while so flipping upward and to our left, it also flashed 'in and out', i.e. sometimes almost went black, at other times gray.
(e) It performed at least three up to left, down to right, and up again loops, on one of which it went below the mountains as described. During the maneuvers we could see that it was a disk, when facing us with one full, half, or any lesser quarter face; but with that face to the south (into the low sun) it went colorless, or flashed out. But when it turned any face or part of a face toward us but to the north, away from the sun, it went dark, solid-looking, and had a perfectly precise edge.
(f) It also turned horizontally to the surface of the earth and on about three occasions absolutely edge-on to us when it formed an extremely thin line that was only just observable against the horizontal stratus clouds beyond.
(g) It then winked out and made a swoop up to the right, or north, and definitely vanished completely – only to

reappear almost instantly down in the middle of the Gap again, and then go through another loop (up and to the south) and behind the mountains again.
(h) After this (and the whole thing only lasted seconds, so rapid were its gyrations) it rose, obviously tilted away from us with a flash from the sun on an edge, became a hairline, and disappeared, apparently straight away from us into the stratus clouds beyond. We waited for ten minutes but saw nothing more.

(6) From the time I first saw the smoke effect until we were both out of the car and watching would be a slow count of about fifteen. We watched the performance for, I would judge, another 15 seconds.

(7) The best way I can describe the motion (all within an extremely small arc, now I come to think of it) would be to say that some persons were flying a circular kite about 1,000 feet in diameter, on a 500-foot lead, in a 250 m.p.h. hurricane over Stroudsburg. The thing had just the erratic 'flipping' with sudden stops or near-angle turns of a kite in a real rough updraft. The 'winking' at first had no really 'off' beam but after one complete up-and-over flip, it appeared almost definitely to be sun reflection on a small surface, the 'out' periods being due to the intense low sunbeams full on the thing which was just about the color of the distant low sky.

This is all I can report on the object. I should add that I phoned a personal friend who is the local reporter of a leading New Jersey newspaper, and asked him to contact a colleague in Stroudsburg to ascertain whether either their local papers or the state or local police had received any calls or reports. I also called McGuire Air Force Base, reported the sighting briefly (Phone: via Mnt Holly; Raymond 4-2100, ♯2713), offered to submit a copy of this report and a marked county map. I was requested to forward this to the Offices of the Information Service c/o Base Operations, McGuire Air Force Base, Trenton, N.J. This I am doing in accordance with the policy of our organisation. I am retaining two copies for my files.

Although I am fully aware that one's wife cannot testify on one's behalf in a court of law, I have asked her to sign this, as we have no other witnesses. Reports of this nature prove nothing but, as our secretary has pointed out, accumulation of (as far as possible) accurate objective records – especially during lulls between what have been called 'flaps' – may be cumulatively valuable. Given sufficient cases that correlate, any theory as to the natures of these highly diverse phenomena will have to take into account what is statistically on record.

(End Report)

CHAPTER III

A Thing on the Ground

Dr Hynek, during his nearly twenty years as consultant to the U.S. Air Force on UFO's, once propounded a dictum in a radio broadcast that is of great importance to our inquiry. When asked what evidence he, as a scientist, required to evaluate reports of these aerial phenomena, he replied with a list of most carefully considered requirements. One of these was that he would like a minimum of four witnesses in each case. Reviewing the cases I recorded in the last chapter, I would point out that, while the bolide I saw off the coast of Nicaragua did not occur in circumstances that met these standards, the matter of 'green lights' in the Caribbean generally did so, since tens of thousands of people witnessed them, and up to hundreds together at one time. The second case also does not fulfill this requirement since only Michael Freedman and I saw it at that time, as far as I have been able to ascertain.

The third case, however, did meet the test, and rather more than well for with us we had one top-notch technician and an amateur astronomer, while the fifth witness arrived in the middle of events and was able to confirm all that the other four of us had been seeing. At the time of writing my report on the fourth case, I was under the impression that only my wife and I had made the observation. However, I later learned from my newspaperman friend that the Stroudsburg police had received several phone calls asking why the 'sun keeps on flashing in and out' at precisely that time. Later still, I further learned that two New Jersey state police officers on road patrol had observed the object from directly

below in the Delaware Water Gap itself. Thus, I think we may say that at least this standard was met in this case. The same may, I believe, be said for my next case.

Before presenting this to you, however, I would like to quote Dr Hynek again. Another important observation that he made on the same broadcast was to the effect that, as of now, we have nothing to go on in this business but reports; but that, once an honest report is made, it itself becomes a fact.

Now, it is the duty of both reporters and scientists to investigate facts. However, a scientist does not have the time to investigate fancies, though he is at liberty to do so – and many of the greatest scientists have done so, and often with surprising results. Nevertheless, it is often very hard to draw the line precisely between fact and fancy. Reports of the sort of which we are speaking are of this nature, especially when they are made by persons who appear to be sane, sensible, and even technically and scientifically educated. As Dr Hynek suggested, once such persons report they have seen something, the report of itself becomes a fact and is thus, in his opinion, worthy of both consideration and examination. If, moreover, such a report is confirmed by at least four witnesses, and meets certain other requirements, it should be most thoroughly investigated.

As a reporter, specialising in the fields of the natural sciences and trained in scientific methodology, I endeavor to approach the investigation of facts along scientific lines. During thirty-five years of scientific reporting, I have run into some extraordinary things – things that seemed to defy logic, and which certainly flew in the face of our present beliefs, both general and scientific. But it clearly is the duty of a reporter to investigate any fact, however preposterous it may at first appear. It was in this frame of reference that I investigated the following extraordinary event.

This incident had broken in the national press in 1952 with rather startling clarity and emphasis. For some reason which I have never fathomed, the press reported it in a serious and straightforward manner, though it was, on the face of it,

much more fantastic than even the average silly-season story. The gist of it was that a 'monster, with glowing red eyes' had been encountered by a number of citizens in a place called Flatwoods, in Braxton County, West Virginia. I had ignored the story, but a few days later a leading national magazine and next the North American Newspaper Alliance, with whom I have been associated for twenty years, phoned me about it. I must say that I was quite surprised. In short order, my then assistant, the same Eddie Schoenenberger mentioned in the previous chapter, and I were on our way to Flatwoods. And this is our story:

My assistant and I left on the evening of September 18th, 1952, at 8:30 p.m. and, after driving all night, arrived at Sutton, the center of Braxton County, late next morning.

After leaving our baggage at a motel, we proceeded to the place in Flatwoods, some 5 miles northeast, where the alleged monster had been seen. There we immediately encountered five of the people who had seen the thing – all boys aged between nine and fourteen years. We talked with them and walked over the ground until sundown.

Returning to the motel in Sutton, we contacted a group of expert cave explorers in Charleston – members of the National Speleological Society and personal friends of ours – and appealed to them for help. Two, who happen to be chemists, kindly responded and drove the 80 miles to Sutton immediately, arriving shortly after midnight.

Next morning, the 20th, we went back to Flatwoods accompanied by Mr J. Holt Byrne (publisher of *The Braxton Central*) and with five younger members of his reportorial staff, went over the ground in great detail, covering several acres in as thorough a manner as possible. We again interviewed and cross-questioned the boys – individually, in pairs, and as a group.

In the afternoon we motored to Gassaway, on the Elk River some 10 miles to the southwest, and interviewed a Mr Anderson Hughes on the advice of the sheriff of Sutton. Mr Hughes pointed out to us roughly the spot on a wooded

mountain above Sugar Creek where a Mr Woodrow Eagle had said he sighted the crash of a flaming object, which he thought was a burning plane. We obtained the loan of the only boat on that stretch of the river and spent four hours searching the forested slopes on the other side, and some other hills beyond them.

At sundown we proceeded down the road along the river toward Charleston, and stopped first at Duck Creek where we tried to locate Woodrow Eagle. Finally, a roadhouse owner who knew him personally located him at the house of a relative in Gassaway, and we spoke to him on the phone. It was too late to meet him in person, and he had nothing to add to his story (which we had already heard from Mr Hughes), so we continued on to Frametown.

Here we located the residence of a Mr J. C. Dean who contributes a small social column about the activities of this town to *The Braxton Democrat* – the other newspaper in Sutton. He had reported on the previous day that still another aerial object had crashed or landed on a nearby farm. Mr Dean received us most courteously and informed us that this example had landed on an overgrown and isolated field at the top of a hill known as James' Knoll or Knob but that, although seen by the two young James boys, it had not been investigated because it had been regarded as a fireball.

Since it was by then nearly midnight, we continued on to Charleston where we spent the night. The next day, we met other members of the National Speleological Society. One of them – Mrs Alice Williams – informed us that she had witnessed the disintegration of still another fiery object in the air at a height of not more than a few hundred feet, to the west of Charleston on the evening of September 12th. This was also witnessed by a couple named Mr and Mrs Clarence McClane, who affirmed that when the object disintegrated 'a lot of ashes fell to the ground'.

We left Charleston at 4:30 p.m. that afternoon and drove to Washington, D.C., arriving in the early morning of the 22nd, and then returned to New York later that day.

The Initial Reports

These are the newspaper reports that led us to our investigation in the first place. They must be paraphrased since they are too long for complete quotation. They contain much essential information and will serve to fix the names and locale of the participants and of the incidents. There were four of these preliminary reports.

REPORT NO. 1 This was a local Baltimore account, later picked up by the wire services but not extensively used. It related the passage of a 'fireball' over that city at 7:00 p.m. on the evening of Friday September 12th. It so happens that my assistant and I were driving into Baltimore that evening, and we met two people who had seen a slow-moving reddish object pass over from east to west. This was later described and 'explained', by a Mr P. M. Reese of the Maryland Academy of Sciences staff, as a 'fireball meteor'. He concluded – incorrectly, we believe – that it was 'traveling at a height of from 60 to 70 miles' and was about the 'size of your fist'. He further stated that it 'was burned out'. However, a similar, if not the same, object was seen over both Frederick and Hagerstown. Also, something comparable was reported about the same time from Kingsport, Tennessee, and from Wheeling and Parkersburg, West Virginia.

REPORT NO. 2 This was wire service material that was widely printed and commented upon. Its central theme was that a 12-foot, man-shaped, green monster with bulging red eyes and 'clawy' hands had been seen on a hilltop near the small village of Flatwoods, 5 miles from the seat of Braxton County, West Virginia.

It stated that: (a) People were attracted to the hill by a 'meteor' that had passed over it about 7:15 p.m.

(b) This appeared to have landed and 'pulsed' with light.

(c) A group of seven people shone '*a flashlight on it*' and saw the 'monster'.

(d) A sheriff and others went to investigate the next

hot, stuffy odor'.

(e) The first reporter on the scene, a Mr A. Lee Stewart, son of the owner of *The Braxton Democrat* of Sutton, emphatically did not think the people who witnessed all this were lying. However, he ends his report with, 'Of course, at twilight you can see a lot of things. They could have seen an owl sitting up there in a tree, and put a body under it.'

The significance of these accounts is that, although reporting something that apparently occurred, they were considerably inaccurate, as subsequent investigations on the spot have shown.

REPORT NO. 3 This appeared in *The Braxton Democrat*, Mr Stewart's own paper, but does not carry his or any other byline. This report more or less ignores the meteor-like object that passed over the village of Flatwoods and was observed by the youngsters who were playing football. These were Ronald Shaver, Theodore Neal, and Neal Nunley. However, it states that since they thought it had landed on the hilltop they set off to investigate and, passing some houses, were joined by Mrs Kathleen May, her two sons, Edward and Theodore May, and seventeen-year-old Eugene Lemon. As they approached the place where they thought it had landed, they noticed a 'foggy mist' and a 'peculiar nauseating odor that had a tendency to burn their nostrils and throats'. At this point Eugene Lemon 'suddenly sighted a pair of eyes, shining through the fog'. He turned his flash on it, and they all saw 'a huge man-like creature. It was in the shape of a man with an oversized head of a fiery orange color'. They figured it was 'at least 10 or 12 feet tall, and its eyes protruded and seemed to throw off beams of light'. They described the body as of a dark green color and said the creature had small, claw-like hands that extended in front of it. Lemon seems to have fainted at this juncture, but then they all ran. Mrs May called the sheriff and road patrol, who were not available. Mr Stewart, however, 'went at once to the place and talked with each member of the party,

receiving the same story from each one'. According to the published report also, he returned at 7 o'clock the next morning and found 'two wide skid marks about 10 or 12 feet apart and each about 10 yards long, and trampled grass at each end. The odor still persisted on the grass when you got close to the ground, and there were grease marks on some spots.' These observations require careful analysis in view of the actual first-hand reports the boys gave us, and the matter of the smell and the grease.

REPORT NO. 4 This comes from the rival paper in Sutton, *The Braxton Central*, which is owned, published, and edited by J. Holt Byrne. This story differs considerably from that of the *Braxton Democrat*. For instance, the *Central*'s account of this affair starts off by admitting that it was written 'almost a full week after the appearance on the hilltop'. However, it adds a great deal of new information, changes the spelling of the names of some of the participants and adds another. Its main thesis was that the people definitely did see something and that it could only be one of three things: (1) A man from another planet. (2) Vapor from a falling meteorite that took the form of a man. (3) An omen of disaster.

It then refers to a 'meteor' that was visible that night over parts of Pennsylvania, Maryland, and West Virginia. It adds that this passed over Flatwoods at 7:15, and that one of the boys said that a flying saucer had landed and they were going to look at it. Mrs May joined them and they made a '¾ mile trip up the hill' (Mr Stewart said 300 yards). (The actual distance was a mile and a bit from the football field, and 850 yards from Mrs May's house.) The actual description obtained from Mrs May is very illuminating and we quote:

'There suddenly appeared two lights resembling flashlights which seemed to be about a foot apart. One of the boys turned his flashlight on the lights and there stood a huge man about 10 feet in height and 4 feet wide. It had a bright red face, bright green clothing, and a head which resembled the ace of spades, and its clothing from the waist down hung in great folds. It appeared to be moving towards us as if it

were floating through the air.'

The report, written by Mr Byrne, adds that Sheriff Carr and his deputy, Mr Burnell Long, were away investigating another landing of what a man named Woodrow Eagle described as 'a small Cub airplane' that he saw crash into a hillside beyond Gassaway while afire.

Analysis of these reports

From the above reports two things are fairly clear. First, that something very unusual and normally inexplicable appears to have been seen by seven (and perhaps eight) people at Flatwoods, in Braxton County, West Virginia, about 7:15 p.m. on the evening of September 12th. Second, the details of what they saw and even of who saw the phenomenon have been confused. There are, however, a number of both important and worthwhile points that stand out. These may be summarised as follows:

(1) There were unexplained objects in the sky over Maryland and West Virginia, and possibly Pennsylvania, that night about sundown, which was at 7 o'clock.

(2) Something that gave light landed at Flatwoods and another at Sugar Creek about 7:15 that evening.

(3) Seven or eight people inspected the former, at least five of them juveniles (this is very important).

(4) Somebody – Woodrow Eagle – saw something crash in flames on a wooded hillside at Sugar Creek, and was sufficiently convinced that it was a construction to call the sheriff, who investigated.

Beyond this nobody should be prepared to go on the evidence presented by these reports. Nevertheless, these four points are sufficiently strong, when taken in combination, to prompt any seasoned investigator to pay the location a visit. This we did, and what we then encountered tells an almost entirely different and extremely peculiar story.

The 'Something' at Flatwoods

What we encountered when we got to Braxton County, West Virginia, was something quite other than that which

we had expected. Everybody had seen 'the meteor' and heard about the 'monster' at Flatwoods. Most people appeared to take both reports at their face value. There were many who scoffed, but they usually concluded their remarks with the strange observation that 'I saw that meteor.' We interviewed and spoke to hundreds, and their stories were frankly amazing. We could not record them all and could not reproduce them had we done so, but their substance is as follows:

THE BOYS' STORY. This is a composite of the stories given us by Neal Nunley, Edward and Theodore May, Ronald Shaver, Theodore Neal, and Thomas Hyer.

Several of the boys were playing a game on the Flatwoods football field. At about 7:15 p.m. something glowing bright red, as large as a small outhouse, roundish and traveling at a slow speed, *came round the corner* of a hill (meteors don't go round corners), crossed the valley from northwest to southeast, and then paused in midair before dropping abruptly behind the crest of the hill. The boys watched this strange performance, and Neal Nunley (who was extraordinarily intelligent and well-informed) suggested that it might be a meteorite, any fallen parts of which, he said, he had been told in school should be collected for the State Geological Department. He therefore suggested they go to look. At this moment they were amazed to see a very bright orange light flare up behind the ridge of the hill and then fade away again to a dull, cherry-red glow. As they started forward up the route, they saw this light repeatedly and regularly flashing bright and dim with the same colors.

They had to run up the main road toward Sutton, cross the railway tracks, and climb a rough hill road to the corner where there are three houses, one occupied by the May family. As they reached this point (which takes 10 full minutes), Mrs May came out on the porch and asked them where they were going, and Neal Nunley states that Ronald Shaver said, 'A flying saucer has landed on the hill and we're going to look at it.' He must have sounded convincing be-

cause Mrs May, who works as a beautician in Sutton, decided to accompany them along with her two sons, and asked them to wait while she had a visiting neighbor – Eugene Lemon – get a flashlight.

The party then set out up the 850 yards of fairly level grass pathway which leads along the crest of the ridge. Somewhere along this route little Tommy Hyer joined them.

The path leads along a fence to a five-bar gate closed by a stout chain and a twisted heavy wire, marking the Bailey Fisher property. As good country folk, they unwired the gate, passed through, and then rewired it behind them, despite the fact that something was now clearly visible lying on the steep inner slope of the hill about 50 yards from the ridge crest, and pulsing with eerie light. They proceeded up the path, which makes four bends, and finally – Eugene Lemon and Neal Nunley in the lead – rounded the last bend through an abandoned gateway. The order of procession after Lemon and Nunley was Mrs May and one of her sons (Eddie), then Ronald Shaver and Teddie May, with Teddie Neal alongside, and trailing somewhere not far behind was Tommy Hyer. Eugene Lemon had taken his large dog with him, and this, running ahead, had first set up a terrible racket as it turned the last bend in the path. Then they met it streaking homeward, giving tongue. At the same time they noticed an unnatural mist that had spread all over the ground around the area. As they entered this mist, an atrocious, sickly, 'warm', smell like that of hot, greased metal – but overpowering – had assailed them. Their eyes began to water and their noses smarted.

As they rounded the last bend, Mrs May called out to Eugene Lemon that she saw a pair of eyes in an oak tree to the left ahead, saying there was either an opossum or a raccoon in the tree. She asked Neal Nunley, who said that he was carrying the torch, to flash it in that direction. When he did so, its light disclosed what one and all affirm – despite any published reports to the contrary – answers to the following description. Each person added individual details, but the group was never in conflict.

The entity's top was level with a branch of the tree, and it seemed to end about some six feet below. It was about the size of an enormous man down to the waist. It did *not* have any arms or anything else sticking out of it, but it had a distinct 'head'. This was shaped like an 'ace of spades' (they all repeated this). However, this 'head' had a large circular window in it through which they could see (a) 'darkness' and (b) two 'things like eyes, which stayed fixed and shone straight out.' When further questioned about the latter, the witnesses agreed that these were two objects behind a translucent panel, that emitted light, pale blue in color, in the form of direct, fixed beams of about the dimensions of a standard three-cell flashlight. These, they all said, were focused way above their heads and to the south, and only moved with the entity as it began to glide around. This it finally did, first toward them, and then in the direction of an object which was still lying pulsing in the tall grass nearby.

There was no disagreement about the Object, but a great deal of debate among the boys. All stated that it was there, plainly visible from the time they rounded the corner at the May house, and that it continued to pulse from a dull cherry glow to a vivid orange emanation that first caused them to spot the 'eyes' in the tree. But they disagreed violently on their interpretation of this object. All said it was about the size of an outhouse behind the May residence (which proved to be over 20 feet across), and that it was also shaped like the ace of spades with the point reaching skyward. They also agreed that it was black. Pressed on this point, Ronald Shaver came up with the remark (unprompted) that it was 'obviously black, really, but as it was hot, it was getting red like a hot poker.' Leading from this, we asked if it *was* hot, as they had been within 50 feet of it. Their amazing reply, after much debate among themselves, was that it had *not* been so, though the whole general area seemed to be unnaturally warm and certainly hotter than the rest of the hillside. This puzzled them more than it did us. (Later, and at *our* suggestion, they agreed that it seemed more like a neon sign.)

When he saw the entity, Lemon 'passed out'. There was general confusion, but some of the boys hauled him to his feet and then, as the thing advanced toward them with a gliding motion as if afloat in midair, they all ran. To us, a significant statement made by the boys was that 'Mrs May cleared that there gate in one. Don't know how she did it, but she did.' We don't know either: its top bar reached my chin and I stand exactly six feet. Ronald Shaver is unable to say whether he jumped or climbed it, or went under, through, or around it!

There is only one thing that may be added. The party fled to the May house and administered restoratives to Mr Lemon. They also called other adults who rather reluctantly, it seems, formed a posse and, carrying guns, went up the hill. As Neal Nunley told me, they were back in 25 minutes stating they had searched the place and found nothing. He pointed out that it later had taken us – about a dozen of us – three hours to search the field, and in broad daylight!

The sheriff did arrive that evening, about two hours later. But according to the boys, he scoffed at the whole story and refused even to go up the hill. Three hours later two reporters arrived. (One must have been Mr Stewart.) They did go up the hill, but saw nothing, though they noted the same powerful, metallic stench.

SUBSEQUENT INVESTIGATION. The following day many persons visited the area. They found a 15-foot circular area in the tall grass of the field at the point where the Object was said to have landed and lain. Here the grass was completely flattened and the ground depressed, and still was when we arrived a week later.

Otherwise, there was no substantial material evidence. Mr Stewart stated that he had found two 'skid marks'. But we could not find these when we arrived, nor could any of the boys point them out to us.

Everybody drew our attention to a strange smell in the grass. I still cannot place it, but it is a fairly common odor in organic chemistry laboratories and is almost surely de-

rived from a kind of grass that abounds in the area. We found this grass growing all over the county and it always smelt the same, though not perhaps quite as strongly.

Everyone also pointed out an 'oily substance still on the grass'. There may have been such, but all we could find was a natural sticky exudate produced by the same grass, known locally as 'tar-grass'. This leaves a dark, sticky substance on the hands.

The boys, however, showed us one other thing that seemed to puzzle them. They showed us an area on the crest of the ridge where a patch or strip of vegetation seemed suddenly to have turned brown while the rest of the foliage had not. This was immediately above where the Object had landed. What is more, some of the leaves of a vine which we picked there seemed to have been burned all around the edge, rather than to have died from the stem out as others had done nearby. However, this might well have been evidence of a fungoid disease.

The most significant fact of all, however, was the path of the Object as it fell. It could not have been a meteorite or anything else following a trajectory from free fall. Had it been, it would have hit at another point and either stayed there or rolled on down the slope. It must, therefore, have stopped in midair and deliberately landed vertically.

The Sugar Creek Incident

The facts of this event, which must have occurred at almost the same, if not identical, time but some 10 miles to the southwest of Flatwoods, are quite different.

WOODROW EAGLE'S STORY. Mr Eagle, who lives at a place named Duck Creek, five miles from Gassaway, was driving to Sutton. At a point some three miles southwest of Gassaway, he saw a flaming object, which he thought from his army experience to be a small Piper Cub plane, shoot out over a saddle to his left, cross the main road, the river, and the rail line beyond, and crash into the wooded side of a steep hill immediately to the south.

So struck was he with this 'accident' that he turned his car about and drove back to the nearest house, that of Anderson Hughes. He, however, did not have a telephone, so Mr Eagle drove back another two miles to a gasoline station, and there phoned the sheriff in Sutton.

Then he retraced his steps and went on to Gassaway, where he was to meet his sister. Picking her up with her husband, he drove them back to the place where the incident had occurred. By then it was dark, and he saw lights moving about on the hill beyond the river. As there was no boat available, they went on their way, believing that the sheriff had started to investigate.

It later turned out that the sheriff had not crossed the river, and that the lights were probably carried by fox hunters, who just happened by. In fact the matter was never investigated by anybody, until we arrived.

SUBSEQUENT INVESTIGATION. We made the best attempt possible to investigate the hill at Sugar Creek, but the terrain was difficult. The first cliff rose about 800 feet almost perpendicularly. There was a mile-long saddle above, and two 500-foot hills beyond.

On the comparatively open saddle above the cliff, we found three shallow holes. Beyond each of these, there were wedge-shaped spatters of a strange white substance in small, curled cylinders. This, at first, looked to us like dried snake or turtle eggshell, but we collected some and had it subjected to X-ray and general chemical analysis. It proved to have three layers, the outer smooth, the inner rough, the central, columnar in structure as far as could be ascertained. It contained aragonite, and the whole was porous, which would seem to agree with the description of a reptile eggshell. However, one piece that we soaked and softened, measured 6½ inches when unrolled, and this seems excessive for any North American reptilian eggshell.

Friends from Charleston, under the direction of Earl Walter, went back a week later and searched some more but found only a large tree that had fallen down, bringing other

vegetation with it. This they thought might have created a large dust cloud, since the ground was dry.

A man who lived in a house across the river from the point where the object struck was extremely skeptical of the whole affair. But he then calmly stated that he had seen the 'meteor'. Another man, an exceedingly solid-looking farmer, told us that he and others had been puzzled by smoke that had hung about the face of the hill in question on the evening of September 12th, and he remarked that there had been 'a strong smell of the woods burning'. Further, he also stated that his brother, who lived on a farm above the road, had that night seen the flaming object come around a low hill opposite him, *horizontally* and below its crest, making a neat turn, and then go into the valley where Mr Eagle said he saw it crash. He described it as like a 'flaming bucket with a tail'.

Other Sightings

The other reports would be of little more consequence than the usual 'flying saucer sightings' were it not for the remarkable pattern that they display.

(1) A bright globular object was seen passing fairly slowly through the sky at low altitude and at the same time as the others, slightly to the east of the settlement known as Heaters, 5 miles north of Flatwoods. This was allegedly seen by several people along a line to the southeast and to a point about due east of Sutton.

(2) An exactly similar object was said to have passed over Sutton Airport at the same time.

(3) Again a similar object was reported to have landed on James' Knoll or Knob, about three miles southeast of the small community of Frametown, in a pasture at the top of a hill surrounded by woods.

(4) Still another slow-moving, low-flying, glowing object was seen west of Charleston by Alice Williams, traveling in the same direction but disintegrating in the air with a rain of ashes.

There is no need to discuss this further. A glance at a map

ought to be sufficient to demonstrate at least one highly significant fact: All of the objects were traveling in the same direction and apparently at the same speed and at exactly the same time. Five of them were just 5 miles away from their colleagues on either side. The Charleston specimen was just seven times this distance to the west of the Frametown example.

Is this, then, evidence of some natural force or of integrated intelligent maneuvering? And maneuvering it was, for at least two of them (the Flatwoods and Sugar Creek specimens) were described as *having rounded hills below their crests.*

Conclusions

In view of the initial reports and our own firsthand investigations, and more especially as a result of plotting the incidents on a map, we are of the opinion that a flight of intelligently controlled objects flew over West Virginia on the evening of September 12th, 1952, and further, that one of them landed or crashed, a second and third crashed, and a fourth blew up in the air. If we are to be logical about this affair we would say that a flight of aerial machines, maneuvering in formation, initially came in over the Eastern seaboard from the Atlantic at about 7 o'clock, passed over Baltimore traveling northwest, then veered around and headed back over central West Virginia fifteen minutes later, from the northwest to southeast. Something went wrong and they began to go out of control.

The one that reached Flatwoods *landed*, rather than crashed, and its 'pilot' or 'occupant' managed to get out before it disintegrated. He or 'it' did so in a space suit or the equivalent of our deep-sea-diving bells, regulated to counteract gravity by adjustment to the density of air at ground level. It then moved to the highest point available, either to scout out the land or to look for its colleagues. It was caught in the act by the seven human beings, but, being 'fixed' in a pressurised suit, when it 'saw' that it had been observed, it headed back to its 'ship'. However, either it, its

suit, or both were already disintegrating for one of several reasons – either too great local heat, too great cold, or through contact with hostile chemical structures (silicones with hydrocarbons, for instance).

This would explain a number of, if not all, the oddities of the case. If this object at Flatwoods was at a different temperature than the surface of our earth when it landed, after heating up by friction while passing through our atmosphere, it might have warmed up too rapidly and thus started to glow. As it began to melt, it gave rise to the gaseous form of whatever it may have been constructed – as dry ice does. This caused the mist and the stench. It rapidly dissolved altogether, which explains its disappearance before the first posse arrived at the hill crest. Its intelligent entity could not cope with our environment except in a diving suit, which was itself disintegrating.

The other constructions that crashed at Sugar Creek and at James' Knoll in Frametown similarly vaporised. That near Charleston burned up in midair, possibly due to carbonaceous material in the lower atmosphere.

If this is not the explanation, then somebody has to explain two things, namely: (a) What did the people see at Flatwoods? And (b) What happened to it?

CHAPTER IV

Shape and Substance of UFO's or UAO's

As we begin our investigation, two questions crawl out of Pandora's ufological box: *What do these things look like?* and *What could they be made of?*

The shapes or forms that Unexplained Aerial Objects take is one of the easier problems we face because there is at least some evidence with which to try and formulate an answer. Combined with verbal reports and sketches, photographs have now provided the strongest case for the acceptance of UAO's. There are now literally hundreds of these photographs that have been published or offered for public scrutiny. Thousands more, it is alleged, have been borrowed, lost, or confiscated by various departments of officialdom in many countries throughout the world. More thousands are said to be discreetly locked away in the private files of the photographers, from fear of ridicule – or fear of just such confiscation.

When I started to write this book, I put out a call to a limited number of my personal friends among the serious-minded ufologists, all but one of whom are professional or competent amateur photographers. The response was so overwhelming that first my editors and then I myself could hardly believe what was happening. What is more, the samples the people sent me had all been carefully selected and fully investigated and evaluated. The professionals among my correspondents had also gone to the trouble of tracking down negatives or original prints of hundreds more newspaper photos. As a result, another deluge descended upon us, because hundreds more local citizens in the areas

covered by these newspapers immediately came forward with their treasures, and often so boldly as to allow their names to be published. While the great body of the photographs was of lights, there was a startling number that were not.

However, the sketches and meticulous detailed drawings that people sent in were even more remarkable and, while in no way as valuable as photographs, added an extraordinary body of valid evidence. These drawings, and their accompanying transcribed reports, came from all parts of the world, and almost all of them from individuals who had never had any contact with any of the other sketchers, and often from people who had never seen even a photo of one of these things. Some were from totally illiterate primitives! Nonetheless, many of these sketches – and many of the photos – show extraordinarily similar, even identical, things.

I just cannot conceive of *all* these photos and sketches being deliberate hoaxes, flights of imagination, or cases of misidentification. Let us suppose that a certain percentage are of each of these categories – let us say that even 99 per cent are. We are still left with that 1 per cent.

In this respect, the question is constantly asked why astronomers, moon-watchers, satellite-trackers, airport control towers, and other persons or units who spend their working hours watching the skies don't see and report these things. The answer is simply that *they* do. Indeed, most of their reports don't get published (and, I suspect, not only for security reasons). Nevertheless, they do see and have always been seeing these things. It does seem odd that more of them are not publicly reported by both the public and technicians but how many laymen and how many technicians use telescopes or other devices set to the middle distances – that is, between the farthest (up) possible enemy aircraft, and the nearest astronomical bodies. Only moon-watchers and sun-watchers, with their instruments set at particular focal lengths, are likely to catch 'unidentified objects' passing across the comparatively large faces of those bodies.

While professional astronomers and meteorologists have,

as we shall see later, been reporting these things for three hundred years, they invariably classify them by names already known to scientists, or at least accepted by people in the field. As an example, there is an incredible list of such items – some 60 pages of very small print – published by R. P. Greg in 1861 in *The Journal* of the British Association for the Advancement of Science (one part of this amazing catalog is reprinted in Chapter 11). Therein, everything is classed either as a 'meteor' or a 'fireball', whatever the facts. Some of the actions of the objects described – such as making right-angle turns, bobbing up and down, stopping and reversing, and so forth – are just not possible of performance by meteors, meteorites, bolides, fireballs, or any other natural objects that are in 'free flight'.

If you lie in a deck chair or on the ground on almost any clear night at any season, away from the overglow of a city or other source of artificial ground light, you will surely see at least one object (or light) that does not behave in the manner prescribed by Newtonian physical laws. Often this performance is merely a similitude – that is, misinterpreted by us, the nonprofessional observers, because we don't have the immediate ability to work out the coordinates of its flight, or the necessary knowledge of many other factors that may vitally affect the observation. Nonetheless, UAO's (and UAP's) are a great deal more prevalent than the average person suspects.

Much of the trouble with ufology is not that we misinterpret what we see but that we don't know *how* to interpret it. These are two quite different situations. For example, such persons as long-time ship captains are arbitrarily told by nonmasters of ships that they can't tell a buoy or a floating log from an unidentified form of a large sea creature. Or an experienced military or commercial pilot is told that he can't distinguish the planet Venus from a UAO. (He may even be told that when the planet happens not to be visible at the time from this side of the earth!) When it comes to the matter of the shape or form of UAO's, observers find themselves being informed that such and such is *impossible.* What

it really means is that the circumstances of the sightings do not happen to fit the then prevailing scientific theories.

UAO's have, according to those who have photographed, depicted, or reported them, displayed such a bewildering variety of forms, both regular and irregular, patterned and amorphous, that it is quite useless to try and list them. Yet, among this assortment of forms there are some that appear to be consistent, or more or less so. Most common is the simple spherical ellipsoid – or two flattened bowls (saucers without the indent to hold the cup) placed edge to edge – this type seems to have been around for a very long time. I call it the Model-T of the UAO's. Next come the hat-shaped items – mostly like ceiling light fixtures but 'flying' downside-up, as it were. These are like inverted bowls of various constructions; convex above and flat or concave below. They have been depicted with all manner of flanges and decks, lumps and bumps, and cabins or what-else on the top. Some of them are said to have had windows or portholes all around; to have revolving flanges at the bottom, flashing lights on their pinnacles, and all manner of other excrescences.

Then there are the globes, the pear-shaped items, the flying eggs, the ovoids, the triangles like kites, the so-called 'flying boxcars' of the Swedes (circa 1945–49), spinning tops shaped like ice-cream cones, and a whole host of facetiously named objects such as 'flying corncobs' (American) and 'flying chamber-pots' (British). There are individual lights, twin lights, strings of lights, and multiple lights. There are diaphanous, willowy things that roar through the noonday sky; crosses (of sundry forms) that just appear, hover, and then vanish; beams and arcs of light at night; and wraiths of smoky stuff in the daytime. The 'cigar-shaped' items greatly excite the ufologists because they appear to be very large and stay at great altitude, and are thus referred to as 'mother ships'. Tiny little placoid disks are said to land in ditches and monitor our actions (and even our thoughts!) and then buzz back up into the sky to enter some discoidal or other larger device. Vast things shaped like coins are said to come and

hover over populated areas and cause the sun to 'flash on and off'. But one could go on forever with this sort of report and speculation.

The point is: If these things exist, and there is now every reason to believe that they do, they *ought* to be of infinite variety, for the universe is a very big place, and the things in it must of necessity be infinite in form, size, and behavior. Of much more import, at this moment, is to consider just what they could be *composed* of.

Considering the bewildering array of shapes that UAO's have been said to display, we may be permitted to ask what on earth – or off it – they might be made of. I am fully aware that this may be considered an extremely silly question in view of the fact that we have not as yet (as far as is publicly known, at least) *got* one. Nevertheless, as I stated earlier, we are never going to get anywhere unless we ask questions, however puerile they may sound. Actually, this is a pertinent question and may once again be dealt with by the dichotomous method.

Thus, the first thing we must ask is whether these things are material or nonmaterial – to wit, composed of matter, or pure energy, or whatever else. Leading from this we are naturally confronted by the question: 'If material, what kind of matter?' Let us try to deal with the nonmatter suggestion first.

It is now more or less universally agreed that what we call matter is but a complex of energy-packets arranged in certain ordered patterns. To oversimplify perhaps, it may thus be said that an atom is somewhat like a solar system, with a central core and a number of items revolving around that. What is more, the sizes of the core and the revolving particles are not too far off the comparable sizes (and distances between) the units of a solar system such as ours. Thus, matter is mostly 'space' and there is a positively tremendous amount of spare 'space' in it. Therefore, it is physically possible either to have other sets of matter almost in the same place at the same time, or for other arrangements of matter to 'pass through it'. The best simile is the old example of a

stream of water jetting from a hose through a chicken-wire fence. Apart from a few drips, the stream of water just carries on as directed, while the wire remains quite unaltered – apart from getting wet. This is a pure analogy in tridimensional, Newtonian physical terms. Elevated to the plane of nuclear physics, any such procedure becomes much simpler – and much more possible. In other words, we really have at least three choices for consideration here – matter as we know it; matter of a form or forms that we don't know; and nonmatter; and in each case possibly in the same place (virtually) at the same time.

The possibilities for items of nonmatter must be almost if not entirely endless. We have recently been subjected to notions of counter-matter or anti-matter within our own time progression; and then further, of 'reversed time', which is to say an existence going from the future (ours) to the past (ours again). If there is room for other material existences right in our own time and place, there ought to be plenty of room for other existences, such as space-time-continua. The question then arises: Could some of these UAO's (and more especially UAP's) be projections from, or reflections of, reality in some other space-time-continuum? (This will be considered in more detail later.)

Before we go any further, however, we must interject, and then stress as firmly and repeatedly as possible, one absolutely basic fact that, above all others, is of the essence in this whole affair. Perhaps I may best express this fact in the form of a sort of parable that I have used for years when people have asked me the awful question: 'Do you believe in flying saucers?'

My first inclination was to be very angry; my second to be facetious and use a flip comeback like 'I never saw one fly,' or 'I didn't know they did.' But common courtesy demanded that I prepare a more serious-minded reply. The answer came to me one day on a lecture platform when suddenly called upon to answer this stock question. I had been talking about whales and had had a hard time trying to put it across that there is no such thing as 'the whale', taking an

hour to do so by explaining that there are over a hundred completely different kinds of whales, some called whales and some not, including dolphins, porpoises (which are quite different animals), and all sorts of oddities like blackfish and boutos, and ranging in length from over 110 to less than 10 feet, and in weight from 160 tons down to some 160 pounds. I was a little desperate. Therefore, my mind full of whales, I just picked on the first thing that came to mind. This was the North Atlantic Ocean. So, I asked my questioner how many different kinds of things he thought there were in *it*.

There was an awkward silence which, since I was being paid to perform, I was obliged to hitch up. I pointed out that, aside from atoms and little things like that, there were on the one hand several thousands of known kinds of single-celled animals in that ocean, along with tens of thousands of worms, shellfish, and other invertebrates, including thousands of crustaceans, about 30,000 known kinds of fish, some birds, and fifty kinds of whales! and then, on the other hand, all manner of man-made junk, from sunken beer cans to atomic submarines, lobster pots, and even the *Queen Mary*. This produced another thundering silence, so I went on in near desperation to try to make my point – namely, that our universe is a lot bigger than the North Atlantic and that it is, in fact, said to be infinite, so that the number of things in it must also be infinite.

I don't think I got my point over then, nor perhaps have I ever done so since, but I will try once more. Just as there is no such thing as 'the whale', so also there is manifestly no such thing as 'the flying saucer' (nor UAO, nor UAP, nor UFO, nor even Charles Fort's OSF). There can be *a* whale or there can be *whales* – to the tune of a hundred different kinds. There apparently can be *a* UAO or UAO's, but to the tune of infinity. And this is the point. In fact, one of the most curious things about the whole UAO subject is that those who take it most seriously, and notably those scientists who have looked into it in an unbiased manner, seem to be the most confounded by just this particular aspect of it – namely, its complexity, and especially the seemingly endless variety

of the shapes, sizes, and behavior of UAO's, as reported and photographed and tracked on radar and in other ways observed.

However, we must not overlook the fact that astronomers, for instance, have only half-a-hundred or so different *kinds* of things to deal with; a chemist has his hundred-odd basic building blocks, the elements, to start with; the physicist has not many more basic laws; and the nuclear physicists, at least as of now, have a finite number of particles to cope with. True, the electromagnetic spectrum seems to be infinite, but it's all laid out along one line, like a single genus of beetles, and in it 'behavior' is dependent upon mere size and little else. But then let's take a coleopterist – a beetle specialist.

Nobody really knows how many kinds of insects have been described, let alone how many exist. Some estimate the former figure is approaching the million mark, and it has been said by some entomologists that they believe nine-tenths of the kinds that exist on this planet still remain un-described. More than half of them are beetles. Insects range in size from certain members of the ant-beetle-and-wasp group that cannot be seen with the naked eye, to the giant locust of Central America, and the Goliath beetle of South America – a range in real size of 100 million times. Applying this to our airplanes, the biggest brother of a Piper Cub would cover the continent of Africa when landed. When you come to the shapes and forms of insects, you will find the variation – and variability – so enormous that even the computers haven't been able to cope with all of it.

It is not surprising then that, cosmically speaking, UAO's could range in size from that of a subatomic particle to a super-galaxy; in fact, there are no limits in infinity, either way.

Now, having brought up this troublesome business of the extent of our universe, we had better finish up the even more controversial one of the possibility of other universes. In a nutshell, it transpires that there is no known or provable reason why there cannot be space-time-continua other than

the one we are in; while there is a theoretical probability that there are. Proof of the fact is not yet available, but there is every possibility that such proof could and may be obtained. Therefore, the moment we 'go cosmic', as it were, we must bear in mind that, although the 'infinity' of our universe may be finite (Albert Einstein gave this as $10^{57} \times 1.8$ grams), it does not mean that that is all there is to existence. Further, other space-time-continua or universes need be only an infinitely small distance away in time, or space, or both, so that (to grossly oversimplify again) an infinity of universes could be in almost the same place and/or at the same time. This will have to be taken into account, if only as a possibility, when we come to consider where UAO's come from.

Leaving other universes aside for the moment, we have more than enough 'environment' available for the evolution of an almost endless variety of intelligent life-forms. If what we have developed by way of aerial machines in the past fifty years is any criterion of the behavior of even an emerging technological civilisation, several million kinds of equally or more industrious creatures could hardly have failed to come up with such a vast catalog of different shapes and sizes, and with such different performances, that even an entomologist asked to classify them might be expected to boggle. Add to this the fact that time is also infinite, so that some 'civilisations' could have had five, fifty, five hundred, or more millions or billions of years in which to fiddle with space flight, and any attempt to classify their end products (UAO's?) becomes quite useless, silly, and probably impossible.

Despite this bewildering array, it does seem, however, that at least some extraterrestrials may have come up with some very durable models for doing whatever they are doing in our atmosphere, just as Henry Ford stumbled on a really good thing in his original Model-T, the 'Tin Lizzie' that was so dear to everyone. This simple monstrosity did exactly what it was intended to do and at a very moderate cost (scientifically speaking, the *expenditure of energy all down*

the line, from financing and manufacture to service and maintenance), and it remained in successful competition with the mighty Deusenbergs, Stutzes, and other de luxe models for years.

The lenticular or lens-shaped, double-saucer (one inverted into the other) type of UAO seems indeed to be a sort of Tin Lizzie, but, like Fords (in general), it too may have undergone many improvements, such as the addition of landing-gear equivalent to lateral parking devices, and bubble-tops for clear vision and the protection of the riders. Their lighting systems seem also to have been greatly improved, if what people have reported about them and the photos allegedly taken of them are to be believed. Now they have spotlights, revolving rooflights like police patrol cars, stop and start and maybe caution lights, back-up lights, and all the rest. In fact, they would appear to be 'getting with it'.

Judging by the sealed, featureless appearances of the early 'saucers' as reported, it would look very much as if the chaps who first came here in them, or came down into our atmosphere in them, were pretty wary, and relied on things like radar and remote TV-type scanning to guide them. Perhaps they came from a planet where they had evolved seeing-organs for use in other bands of the spectrum so that they could not, or thought they would not, be able to see whatever they wanted to see down here – just as if we tried to study the love-life of the amoeba without a microscope.

I enjoy visualising the first explorer of this lot receiving a hero's welcome, on getting home, for having been the first to step out of his UAO on to the surface of this ghastly place.

But after further exploration they may have learned that the earth's surface was not made of green cheese, and that radiant energy in their accustomed visual band did penetrate our smoggy atmosphere. Hurray for that first hero! Solid landing gear, lights, and windows could now be safely installed in next year's models.

Such conjecture predisposes the notion that the particular creatures specialising in the old double-saucer-shaped models are only a little brighter than we are. They still had to land a fellow on the planet before they could be sure of things or get samples, just as we are waiting for the answers to a whole gamut of questions until we can actually land man on the moon. But, there is no reason why such a primitive (cosmically speaking) technological culture need not have developed devices for super-probes, testing, and collecting before they discovered, invented, or just stumbled upon a power source that sidetracked rocketry and other inefficient reaction-type drives. They may have, in fact, arrived a bit ahead of time, as it were, improperly prepared for exploration – let alone exploitation – of this planet, and proceeded to make just about all the mistakes in the book.

Of course, it would appear that these fellows are not alone. If you accept the fact that at least some UAO's are intelligently controlled machines made by animate entities, you will be forced to admit that there seem to be whole masses of other types or breeds of 'fellows' either muscling-in here or sharing in the enterprise. To be properly logical, though, we must admit that, judging by the plethora of gadgets that man has invented in the past hundred years, there is no valid reason for stating that this is so. All the multitudinous forms of UAO's reported could well be the gadgetry of but a single 'race'. However, this latter theory shows distinct signs of sagging.

The disk-boys would seem to be as near simpletons (technically speaking) as we are; otherwise, why do they not junk their 'flying saucers' in favor of some of the other obviously much better models now apparently available? I am speaking particularly of the UAO's that are reported to *change shape*. Obviously, we'd all abandon our limousines and station wagons within the year if General Motors or somebody else really big came out with a mechanical transport device that could change at the push of a button into, say, a large doghouse, a speedboat hull, or an innocent-looking rock as a blind for deer hunting. As a matter of fact, we have made

a move in that direction with our aquatic automobiles, hover-craft, and such.

But it would seem there are spacecraft in even more 'advanced models', if some of the reports are to be believed, for on occasion they are reported to change not only their shape but their size. We have on earth such creatures as puffer fish, toads, and sundry other animals that suddenly blow themselves up to the power of 10^2, and at the same time change shape radically. This is remarkable but really is not more than worth remarking upon from a mechanical point of view because the same things are much more outstandingly achieved by toy balloons that come as a limp, ten-inch flab but which can be transformed almost instantly into a six-foot Mickey Mouse.

However, when UAO's seem to do this it not only puzzles but sometimes scares the fliers and others who observe them, and completely baffles the serious-minded ufologists, engineers, and physicists. On the one hand these people apparently just can't see how this feat could possibly be done at all; on the other hand, being stuck with the belief that the things are machines, they seem universally convinced that they must be made of what we call metal. Yet metals, even as we know them, vary widely in consistency and other properties. Take, for instance, pure potassium, which can be cut with a knife and looks much like old limburger cheese; or mercury, which is liquid. I can well conceive of a supply of UAO's being carried aboard what the UFO-buffs call a 'mother-ship', neatly packed in a hold in a collapsed condition just like toy balloons, and then being inflated – which need not mean 'pumped' full of a gas (though that might also be the case) – for launching into our atmosphere. It would be a great saving of cargo space, apart from anything else.

But why would they want to suddenly change shape or size? They might want to scare us, the way we scare bulls by opening an umbrella at them. Or, changing shape might simply be their way of changing gear! Silly answers, but then, why not? Then again, they might have taken on an overload of specimens, or the captain just might want more

room to lay out his star-charts. Really, the whole question is ridiculously mundane, but we often forget the simple things in life, or overlook simple answers to even complex questions. Why should entities who have crossed space to visit us be very different from us in emotions or common sense, even if they are only *humanoid* and not human? If you live around chimpanzees long enough you'll soon realise that they do not just 'ape us'. They think like us, play the same games, express the same emotions, and even seem to have the same sort of humor and wit. Why shouldn't a UAO pilot get bored and feel like having a bit of fun? Which brings us to the behavior of UAO's, which is just as varied as their shapes and sizes, and seems to mystify and bewilder everybody just as much, if not more so.

Before entering this most fascinating – to me, at least – field of ethology (the study of the behavior of life-forms in their natural environment), we must, however, consider briefly the even more pertinent question: What could UAO's be made of, if they are material and composed of matter as we know it?

The parameters here are fairly simple. Matter is found or occurs in three basic and some intermediate forms: the gaseous, the liquid, the colloidal, and the solid, plus what may be called super-solids, in which state matter may have enormous densities. Astro-physicists have told us that a cubic inch of the matter of some dwarf stars might weigh thousands of our tons.

Now, objects could be composed of any of these forms of matter, or of any combinations of them. Solids, by our definition, may be of various kinds – 'organic', which is to say based on chains of carbon molecules (and conceivably of other elements such as silicon, iron, etc.); metallic, as in metals; or nonmetallic, as in glasses, ceramics, and so forth.

UAO's could be combinations of any of these, or also composed of a combination of gases, liquids, and solids. After all, automobiles are good examples of the former, and we ourselves of the latter. And here, once again, we find ourselves confronted with the same old alternative – namely,

that UAO's are either themselves life-forms, or they are constructed by life-forms.

While they may be of almost any and every conceivable (and an endless string of inconceivable) forms, shapes, and sizes, they may also be made of pure energy; of matter in forms other than that which we know; or of matter in some form that we *do* know. This is a pretty wide range of possibility, but they must be taken into account in considering these phenomena.

Plasma balls, ball lightning, and even will-o'-the-wisps (swamp gas?) are apparently here to stay; yet, they are definitely nonmaterial, at least according to our present definition of matter. Some UAO's may quite well be of this ilk; others may not.

Then, there are the para-objects and the quasi-objects, or projections and reflections, which we shall discuss later. If any of these objects are truly inanimate, then they are not, as we have said, of any interest to us. But if they are not inanimate, they can only be animate or the products of animation. And, until we catch one, there is only one way of telling just what they might be. This is by studying their *behavior*, which we shall now do.

CHAPTER V

What Do They Do?

In undertaking to study the behavior of UAO's, I have for the sake of convenience broken it down into five categories: (1) their appearance, (2) their movements, (3) their landings, (4) their emissions, and (5) their ingestions. Let us take these one at a time and in that order, and try to assemble just what has been reported about UAO's in these respects, because the behavior of things gives us a better clue as to their nature than does mere measurement and analysis of their composition.

The first most obvious fact about UAO's is that they appear, or 'eventuate'. Just how have they been reported to do this? Either they come to us from beyond, by progression and at all manner of speeds – that is, they come *through* space at our time, like the bolide we witnessed off the coast of Nicaragua; or, they seem to be able to appear (materialise) in two ways: Either they just appear suddenly, or they materialise slowly. Both of these performances tend to alarm people because they imply principles that are as of now unknown to us. Those that appear suddenly, however, can be compared in some ways to flames or reflections. Hold a match to a candle and, presto, there is something there that was not there an instant before. The flame is an 'object'. It appears instantly, and it can also vanish instantly. At the same time, there are things that may appear gradually – like a tree, for instance. You have a bare lawn, and then one day a little green spike appears; wait long enough and you may have a 50-foot oak tree. This 'thing' has just appeared where it wasn't before. Some UAO's seem to appear slowly

like that; perhaps their time-scale is manifestly different from ours.

Once a UAO has appeared it may or it may not stabilise, or stay put. But, if it does, it need not, it seems, stay put in the form in which it arrived. It can remain completely static in space, but in time it may change its size and/or shape; and it may vary in a lot of other qualities, without either changing place or vanishing. Some of these changes are listed later under the heading of movements; therefore I shall not consider them here. UAO's may gyrate, pulse in size or in other ways, or perform certain other actions also *in situ*, as they have repeatedly been reported to do. This has nothing to do with movement *per se*. It is an intrinsic aspect of mere eventuation.

But sooner or later, UAO's go away, and how they do this is the exact obverse of their methods of arrival. They can go away linearly and by progression, like a rocket going up into the atmosphere until it vanishes from our sight. They may apparently slowly dim until they are no longer visible to us or detectable by our machines. Or, finally, they apparently can just 'flash out'. This behavior is perhaps even more disturbing to us than their sudden appearance. One somehow does not like things just suddenly disappearing – yet you can, as I said, snuff out a candle flame or turn a flashlight away from a cat's eyes. This is not such a wild analogy as might at first be supposed. We are not unduly worried about the disappearance of a flame or a reflection because we know how to re-create it – or, at least, we think we do.

Does this mean we must assume that UAO's are expressions of something that is always there, simply waiting to be tapped by the appropriate stimuli? This could be so from a purely physical standpoint. On the one hand, we are now beginning to penetrate the electromagnetic spectrum from the visible (to us) band via photography, both through the ultraviolet and the infrared ends, and things invisible to the photographer are constantly turning up. The simplest form of this is infrared photography in the dark. On the other hand, we have the various astronomical bodies that

have been 'brought to light' by radio-telescopes. Then, in addition, there are less pragmatic suggestions of the existence of an unseen world around us.

There is now overwhelming evidence that animals detect presences that are outside the range of our senses, or for which we have no senses for detection. Having worked extensively with animals for thirty years, I am personally satisfied that some of these presences are 'objects', as opposed to what we may call diffusions, like the minute earth tremors that precede an earthquake, super- or sub-sonic sounds, or subtle aromas or stinks. I say this because I have more than once witnessed over a hundred animals of all different types, from monkeys to lizards, in one room suddenly stop all activity and stare fixedly at a particular point, and then follow that point by turning their heads in unison in the same direction, as whatever caught their attention moved spatially through a wide angle. Had the alert been a mere diffusion they would have just stopped all activity and stared fixedly ahead – something I have also witnessed many times, notably just before earthquakes.

Another example of the alleged detection of otherwise invisible objects, and in this case of UAO's and UAP's specifically, has been given to us in a most curious book entitled *They Live in the Sky* written by a radio operator and mechanic from New Zealand under the pen-name of Trevor James. This book, which first appeared in 1958, was immediately classed as a contactee document by all serious-minded ufologists. It undeniably displays a streak of mysticism, though it is written in a perfectly straightforward manner by a technician. It contains a large number of photographs of things in the sky, ranging in form from opaque spheres to vast diaphanous monstrosities, which the author claims he photographed in our western deserts with a special camera he built. I was present when a number of the original transparencies used in that book were subjected to penetrating analysis by Rexford Daniels, a recognised electromagnetic interference expert, and I was not just surprised, but shocked, to hear his findings. Some of the

photographs were a series of stereos, which – it was pointed out to us – revealed that some of the alleged objects had been in different places at the same time! Another engineer – Al Bielek – expressed doubts, but so far no professional photographer has proved the negatives to be fakes.

This is quite another matter than mere photographs of (to our eyes) invisible objects, and prompts us to a number of considerations regarding both the sudden and the gradual appearances and disappearances of UAO's *in situ*. This would seem to be the province of physicists, engineers, and possibly even of mechanics. Upon just what principles do UAO's eventuate, and is their manner of doing so within the compass of our present understanding of physical laws? If not, upon what principles do they operate? In this connection, it is interesting to note that we don't really know what flame is, or how it appears, or why! The mechanics – i.e., the chemi-physics of the process – are now defined, but the item itself is not. The same may be said of explosions – another thing in which UAO's sometimes indulge, as we shall see.

But, before we leave Trevor James and his strange photographs, we are constrained to ask whether we are dealing here with alleged UAO's or UAP's, or both. Further, can any true distinction be made between the two? James himself places a highly sensational connotation on these pictures, describing them as space-people, both good and bad, and both in and out of their machines. In view of the peculiar circumstances in which he tells us he first stumbled upon this business, and the weird conditions under which he subsequently pursued the matter, one may well attribute these explanations to imagination. However, the photographs could still be genuine, and certainly the best experts have not been able to prove fakery. If they are real, we face a particularly unpleasant situation, for it can mean only that our atmosphere is literally crowded with (to us) invisible objects, ranging in size from a cookie to a county; and if so, we would appear to have no way of getting at them, as of now. But, there is a further much more un-

pleasant aspect to these photographs.

Be they UAO's or UAP's, they don't look like machines at all. They look to a biologist horribly like unicellular life-forms, complete in some cases with nuclei, nucleoli, vacuoles, and all the rest. Some are even amoebic in form. What is more, they appear as completely opaque, mildly diaphanous, completely tenuous, or what can only be called evanescent, or merging into mere light hazes.

As to the movements of UAO's, we find ourselves confronted with some abstruse problems, though with simple or understandable aspects. We have noted that UAO's may perform 'movements' of themselves, and *in situ*, or without actually moving spatially. Very often they have been reported to gyrate like tops. They are also reported to pulsate – to change size rhythmically. Then again, they are said on occasion to be able to change shape completely – from spheres to rhombs, to subangular masses, and then even to angular ones, and on all manner of different basic geometrical planes.

While perplexing to engineers, considered in a biological light this behavior is not so strange at all. Let us not forget the viruses that are amorphous globs in one 'generation' and crystalline items, with regular, patterned, angular facets in the next generation. If viruses (which are 'alive') can do this in a matter of hours or minutes, UAO's – if life-forms – could possibly do it in seconds, or even parts of seconds.

Thus, UAO's apparently do things in three different manners. They perform various motions of themselves, like gyrating; they proceed; and they land on the surface of our earth.

The first action, or set of actions, may be rather summarily disposed of. This is principally the inclination or ability of these objects to perform a sort of 'falling-leaf' motion in one spot. They have also been reported to 'bounce up and down'. The most curious aspect of these performances is that they most usually occur when a UAO comes to a stop. Thus, one of these things may go buzzing all over

the sky at terrific speeds, make instantaneous (to us) stops and starts, and apparently angular turns; then it may come to a stop and just 'sway' there for any period. Since they have an equal ability to just stop dead and stay put, one wonders why they indulge in these secondary movements. Is it induced by some pulsing in their energy output or drive, or are they just rocking like a ship tied to jetty exposed to an ocean swell? By 'falling-leaf' is meant a seesawing but not necessarily with any loss of altitude (in fact, I have been unable to trace a single report of descent by this method).

Then, there has been ascribed to one type of UAO still another motion. This type of UAO was designated the giant whirling cloud, or top, by Aimé Michel in his now classic review of incidents that occurred over France in the early 1950's (which were certainly diaphanous items, if not UAP's). The motion is that of a pendulum, just as if the object were suspended on a line and dangling in our atmosphere.

Other movements are procedural – that is, the object is moving from one location to another. Rather naturally, almost every report of a UAO is accompanied by some statement about movement since very few have been alleged to just appear, remain stationary or relatively so, and then just disappear again. The vast majority have been reported only when in motion. Now, while these things have been said on occasion to have bounced or bounded along in both regular and irregularly spaced 'ups-and-downs' or to take a serpentine course horizontal to the surface of the earth, there does not seem to be a single record of one proceeding by 'fits-and-starts' or 'pumping' along. Indeed, two police officers said they 'almost broke' their necks trying to keep an eye on one as it flashed, almost if not completely instantaneously, from one end to the other of a reservoir lake at Wanaque in New Jersey in 1966; but, this was not a true intermittent progression. In other words, according to everybody who has stated they have observed one, the things travel at a steady speed, or with acceleration or deceleration.

Such movement is more the nature of a powered machine than that of an animal, but not exclusively so. Many aerial and aquatic animals appear to us to maintain just such a steady progression, notably when wing or fin beats are too rapid for us to see, or more especially when they employ jet-propulsion, like squids. Even some terrestrial animals may appear, at a distance, to be proceeding along a perfectly smooth, uninterrupted course; their bodies so doing, while their legs whirr with a regular rhythm, just as propellered airplanes do.

For the most part, UAO's are said to proceed in either a straight line, a great curve, or in tight curves with a great number of variations as are known to pilots. However, they also maneuver, which is something quite else. And it is in this respect that they have caught the attention of fliers and nonfliers, scientists and non-scientists alike, for here they are alleged to display two quite contrary performances. On the one hand, they are said to do things that no machine of ours can do; on the other hand, they are alleged to do things that only an intelligently controlled thing could do.

In other words, they can apparently make instantaneous starts and stops, at least as far as our senses and our best detection devices can see, *and* make angular turns of any degree up to 180 degrees, or complete reversal. Having witnessed this sort of performance myself, as described in an earlier chapter, I can vouch for the fact that the procedure is uncanny. What is more, at the tremendous speeds alleged, objects of this size, if solid, could not perform in this manner unless they lacked mass, while any animate object even remotely resembling ourselves could not sustain the stresses to which it would be subjected in even the mildest of these angular maneuvers.

Faced with this dilemma, those who feel that the particular UAO's that perform this way are machines have put forward several suggestions as to how this problem of mass might be obviated. The simplest, and at the same time the most cogent, is that propounded by Major Donald E. Keyhoe in January, 1966, which put forward the notion that the UAO

makers have discovered how to counter gravity. Physicists are divided as to the possibility of this, but they are not one hundred per cent against the notion. Keyhoe pointed out that, while spatial gravity is an immense force, our earth's gravity field is comparatively weak and, if it could be somehow shielded out as we can shield out light, heat, and other forms of radiation, only an equivalent amount of counter-gravitic force would be needed to overcome it.

Any youngster taking basic physics at high school today will understand the relationships among mass, density, weight, and size, and their inter-relationships with speed, velocity, and so forth. Just what a given object will or can do within a given gravitational field is precisely prescribed according to physical laws. However, it is a matter of degree. You can't turn a large supersonic jet-plane at right-angles, but you can a small balloon – at least, it appears to our eyes that you can. Actually, anything making an angular turn must first come to a stop and then set off again in the new direction. In other words, the object doesn't really 'turn' at all – it goes forward, stops, and starts again.

Now, there are animals that appear to do this all the time, living by the billions all around us, and more or less all over the world. These are all manner of insects, and most notably certain bees, and the hover-flies (*Syrphidae*). These flies are exceedingly numerous and varied in form, size, and coloration, many of them looking like certain bees and wasps. Some of the commonest have black-and-yellow-banded bodies and are often at first mistaken for yellow-jackets. These flies delight in wooded glades, where they hover in beams of sunlight apparently, to us at least, absolutely motionless in midair for second or even minutes on end. Then suddenly they just vanish, either altogether or to appear apparently instantly some distance away, and again apparently motionless. What is more, these insects can go forward, backward, up, down, to either side, or in any other direction, and some of their movements are certainly subliminal to us. Though some of these flies are almost as big as bumblebees, most are minute, and they are constructed

externally of a horny substance called chitin. This is an incredible natural plastic with properties that defy our best metallurgical efforts. A June Bug, encased like most insects in this substance but with plating only a fraction of a millimeter thick, can fly into a brick wall at sixty miles an hour, fall to the ground, right itself, spread its wings, and fly off again totally undamaged. Yet a June Bug has a considerable mass.

Might it not be, therefore, that we are making this problem too difficult for ourselves by what I can only call 'terrestrialising' it too readily? Must a machine be made of metal and ceramics? Can't it be of plastics and colloids; or colloids and gases; or even what we have called in Chapter 4 'nonmaterial' altogether? After all, the Syrphid flies are made of plastic and colloids with some liquids and gases, and animals are, in a manner of speaking, machines, though manufactured by their parents genetically rather than in factories with wrenches and screwdrivers. It would seem therefore that while UAO's do some things by way of movement that our machines can not, they don't seem to do anything that animals can't do.

But, you may say, 'What about that alleged method of appearing whereby the thing sort of comes on gradually?' I know it may be stretching a point, but on a summer evening have you ever observed in still air over a pond the formation of a tight, globular, apparently solid 'cloud' of minute, flying insects – each individually so small you did not notice it by itself in the air? Once formed, such a 'cloud' is opaque enough to obstruct your vision of whatever is beyond. (Have you ever watched a cloud form, for that matter?) Why should we deny that some UAO's, and especially the diaphanous ones, may not be particulate? They could still form an entity when so clotted, and then behave as a unit, like a flock of maneuvering starlings or other birds which certainly attain some corporate volition.

This brings us to the second part of the dilemma about their movements that was mentioned above – their apparent intelligent control.

Now, I would like to make it clear that I am not saying, at this juncture, either that UAO's are 'animals', or even that *some* of them might themselves be life-forms, though I shall present evidence later that seems to indicate rather strongly that this might be the case. What I am saying is that, in their physical behavior, UAO's transcend the performance of what we think of as machines in some respects, but that these respects are not beyond what is known to be achieved by animals. Making apparently instantaneous stops and starts and angular turns to the point of complete reversal could be a mere matter of mechanics; 'playing tag' on the other hand is not. And, yet just about everybody, including the most conservative serious-minded ufologist, either insists or admits that they have been observed to do just this in one way or another, and that they therefore show evidence of intelligent control.

Although volition is now thought to be an intrinsic feature of all matter, from quanta to humans, intelligence of the order of 'gamesmanship' of the sporting variety, like playing tag, is still regarded as a perquisite of only the most highly organised animate bodies, or life-forms, known to us. Should UAO's in 'playing tag' merely be avoiding planes, one might liken their actions to that of minute particles of matter in what is called Brownian Movement, a phenomenon that may be observed under any good microscope. This ceaseless agitation of very small particles is quite insensate, and due to their being so small that mere molecular attraction acts and reacts upon them. Indeed, UAO's might employ a gross and refined method of a similar nature for evasions – or even for movement generally. But nothing as 'mechanical' can account for their pursuing tightly maneuvering planes, aping their every action, 'teasing' their pilots and generally behaving like highly intelligent beings. What is even more unnerving is their apparent *inquisitiveness*. This, if anything, appears to be a perquisite of intelligent, mobile life-forms alone – though even some sessile ones, like anemones, definitely explore their surroundings with their tentacles as far as they can.

It has always been surprising to me that many of those who first remarked upon this seeming inquisitiveness on the part of UAO's, and even on occasion named it as the strongest indication of their control by intelligencies, still stubbornly assert that the things can *not* be either themselves life-forms, or the product of intelligent life elsewhere, but are simply machines! Personally, I can't follow this 'reasoning'. If they are machines they must either be made on this earth or off it; and probably by some pretty superior intelligencies at that. Maybe they are robots, or piloted by robots (or what science-fiction writers have called androids), but still there must be, somewhere, the intelligent entities who built and control the robots. And these intelligencies must be at least at the level of the animal life-forms of our planet, quite apart from their engineering skills, if they are inquisitive. I don't wish to belabor the point, but it must be stressed before we consider the third activity of UAO's, which is their landing.

Now, landings could, of course, be accidental and purely mechanical like the arrival of a meteorite, and there is considerable evidence that many so-called 'landings' have actually been of this nature. A good example is the Braxton, West Virginia, case described in Chapter 3. However, of the hundreds – perhaps thousands – of cases now recorded of a UAO touching down or actually landing on the surface of the earth, the vast percentage is said to have subsequently risen and departed upward toward space. What is more, a not inconsequential percentage of these are related to have taken aloft with them specimens of all manner of materials and objects, from rocks and soil to animals and human beings, as we shall see eventually. What is this if it is not 'inquisitiveness'? Landings, moreover, are recorded not only upon terra firma, but also on lakes, seas, and oceans. In the latter cases, the objects seem most often to have plunged directly below, which would seem to indicate that they intended either to float submerged or to land on the bottom.

As a behavioral procedure, the latter is most significant. Let us assume that UAO's are either themselves living

entities or are machines constructed and controlled by intelligent entities. Then put yourself in the ethological framework of, first, an animal of, say, the degree of development of a turtle. Dumped on an island you have never been on before and perceiving all manner of large and energetic beasts rushing about, plus all manner of small unpleasantnesses, such as ants, what would you do? Personally I'd make for the nearest water and duck below, sharks notwithstanding. Take then a pilot – robotic or living – traveling in a submersible craft and under orders to survey an archipelago known to be inhabited by head-hunters, ants (again), and dangerous viruses. If you were the pilot, wouldn't you also duck into the sea and set up a base on its bottom – out of sight, out of sound, and out of most of harm's way? What is more, there's nothing like a water surface as a landing surface – vide our astronautic 'splashdowns'.

Deliberate landings by intelligently controlled entities or objects on this or any other gross astronomical body must be regarded as being of a behavioral nature since our environment is as alien to them as is that of a human laboratory to a nondomesticated animal. Only if a UAO is indigenous to our planet, to its upper atmosphere, or to inner space (that space within the perimeter of our solar system) might its landing here be regarded as an ethological performance. And here we must exercise particular caution. Should some, or any, UAO's *be* indigenous to our prescribed part of the universe in which we both exist, they would be what we call 'natural phenomena', and part and parcel of our circumscribed existence and, presumably, evolution. If such are here now, they have probably been hereabouts as long as we have, and just as likely as long as our ancestors have, right back to the first DNA-like molecule that developed on this planet. If, on the other hand, any of them are from outside our solar system, it is both possible and probable that they are truly visitors, and from another environment altogether. If examples of both origins are represented among our current UAO's, we will have to be doubly

cautious in attempting to assess them.

Looked at another way, it is at least *possible* that our planet has been visited throughout geologic times by life-forms, and even intelligent ones, from time to time. In view of the infinite possibilities for the evolution and current existence of life-forms throughout the universe, the possibilities for the behavior of those that come here are also infinite. On the other hand, the possibilities for such forms within the very limited (cosmically speaking) confines of our little solar system are more likely to be finite – though nonetheless much vaster than we have as yet conceived. Remembering the beetles, we must not forget what just one little planet has achieved in what may be nothing more than a flash of time to others.

We have, I think, therefore four basic possibilities as to the nature of what is landing on our planet: first, life-forms indigenous to our solar system; second, controlled constructions made within our solar system, either on other solid bodies or in space; third, living entities not indigenous to our little bit of the universe; and fourth, constructions coming to us from outside that 'bit', either in space or time.

Only quite recently have the majority of serious-minded ufologists paid any real attention to landings, though these events seem to have occurred since time immemorial and they certainly seem to have been taken very seriously by officialdom all over the world during the past twenty years. Ever since the initiation of the USAF's 'Bluebook' investigations, we have read of teams of military personnel literally pouncing on people who had stated publicly that they had witnessed a landing, and also of their sweeping into areas where landings were said to have occurred – even fencing these off in one way or another. Moreover, it is notable that the military is particularly active when any form of 'occupant' is reported in, coming out of, going into, or being seen near a landed UOA. Thus, despite all the poohpoohing of not only the confirmed skeptics but also the dedicated ufologists, there is every reason to take the matter seriously

and to accept the fact that UAO's do land, and that they may, at least sometimes, have occupants.

Now here we encounter for the first time a more irksome aspect of ufological investigation. In dealing with truly aerial objects or phenomena, we have more than enough proper reports to form the basis of some analysis, and many of these have been backed up with the concrete evidence of photographs and movie films. There is ample place for all manner of hoaxes and fabrications, but the former are usually spottable without too much investigation, and the latter do little real harm to the general inquiry as there are so many reports that *do* stand up to Dr Hynek's several requirements. With landings, on the other hand, there are all too few official reports of any kind. Instead, we are presented with more stories, and the validity of stories is much more difficult to assess than cold and calculated written accounts of, or reports on, observations of things seen in the sky. Moreover, despite the strong sensations most people experience on observing phenomena in the sky, there is less of an emotional shock than running into, stumbling upon, or being pursued by an unknown on the ground. It is only by extreme chance that a professional pilot, radar operator, or police officer will witness a landing, though the last are the most likely to be called when one has occurred. The record shows that farmers, teen-agers on night jaunts or parked in 'lovers' lanes', salesmen who travel by night, truckers, nightwatchmen, and, strangely, mountaineers account for all but a small percentage of accounts, be they proper reports or stories of landings, touchdowns, and/or occupants.

While nighttime landings in populated areas appear to have mounted progressively during the past two years – even if this is only because more people are reporting them – low flights, touchdowns, and landings in the daytime are still for the most part confined to country districts and to outlying or wild areas. This fact further diminishes the likelihood of proper reports being made on these events, while it also enhances the unreliability of the 'stories', due to the greater prevalence of superstition in outlying and backward

areas. Nevertheless, if we analyse the stories that have accumulated throughout the ages, and which are derived from all over the world, a surprisingly clear pattern emerges both as regards the objects and their occupants. What is more and once again, we find absolutely identical descriptions being given by isolated and often illiterate people on opposite sides of the world who could never have heard of each other or even of a 'flying saucer'. On a purely statistical basis therefore, the stories show clear signs of basic validity, and so are, in our opinion, worthy of most thorough investigation.

Under the general title of behavior we grouped the reported actions of UAO's under five major headings – appearance, movement, landings, emissions, and ingestions. The two last are to some extent interrelated and, with but a few exceptions, call for close contact between the object and the observer. For the most part, therefore, these observations have been recorded during cases of very low flight or hovering, touchdowns, or landings.

The actions that UAO's have been said to take at close quarters may be summarised as follows:

They emit noises, stinks, and radiations. They have allegedly been observed to have taken on board electrical power; gases, in the form of our air; and water. Finally, through the medium of their occupants, be they robotic or otherwise, they have repeatedly been stated to have taken aboard mineral and vegetable specimens; live animals (notably dogs); and people – an in particular young *men*.

The noises reportedly made by UAO's are of a very wide variety, from a scarcely audible and not altogether unpleasant murmuring to explosions so monumental as to have at first persuaded whole communities that the proverbial gas tank had exploded or even that an atom bomb had landed. Yet, the outstanding thing about UAO's is that in the vast percentage of cases, they are reported to be utterly silent, even at close quarters. Would that we had tape-recordings of what sounds, short of explosions, they have been said to emit. People generally, even musicians, find it hard to

describe sounds in words – though ornithologists have made valiant efforts to do so for bird calls and songs. Some years ago there was published an article in which the authors recorded a wide survey of national traditional sounds said to be made by common animals. They pointed out, for instance, that while *we* insist that ducks go 'quack-quack-quack', the Russians are just as insistent that they go 'peup-peup-peup'. Thus, when a Brazilian farmer states that a UAO made a noise like an angry bumblebee he gives us much better information than would an educated Russian trying to reproduce, by voice, a quacking sound.

Reported noises made by UAO's seem for the most part to be vibratory, and usually regularly phased – as whirring, buzzing, rumbling, and so forth. Irregularly intermittent clickings and tickings have been reported, and also a continuous noise like escaping steam. Then, there are various 'whooshings' and 'roarings' attributed to take-offs, acceleration, and close maneuvering. Some have been said to let off mild explosive noises, either intermittently or at regular intervals; and, finally, there are the true explosions. Time and time again the humming, whining, or whirring is said to have either risen or fallen in pitch until it became inaudible, after which it is often said to have created a very painful sensation in the head. Children are more sensitive to the higher frequencies than are adults, and the smaller children of several families living in a certain area near my home have several times gone running and screaming to their mothers or elders, asking them to 'stop this awful sound.' After several recurrences of this, one father happened to look out of the window and perceived a large glowing UAO hovering between his house and that of his nearest neighbor. Since then, whenever the children have complained, the adults have run out with binoculars; and they assert that every time they have seen a UAO above them – except when there was a heavy, low cloud cover.

All these noises and airborne vibrations sound like the emissions of mechanical devices – particularly the explosions. However, before we pronounce this as definite

evidence that all UAO's are machines we should take note of two facts. First, few UAO's, comparatively speaking, have been reported as making *any* noises; second, many animals, notably insects like cicadas, make machine-like noises – and mechanically to boot. Nothing sounds more mechanical than your own heart heard through a stethoscope; it sounds just like what it is – namely, a pump! Further, there are animals that let off positively stunning 'explosions' – notably a small aquatic frog from Central America that goes 'bang' from time to time after rain, and which can be heard for up to a mile. A related frog gives out with an ear-shattering 'WOW'.

Chemi-effluents, or stinks, produced or left by UAO's are much rarer than noises in the records, but they make up for this in bizarreness and unexpectedness. They appear to be of three basic kinds – metallic, aromatic, and others such as 'sulphurous'. Everybody connected with the Braxton landing insisted that there was an overpowering stench of 'hot metal' around the object. The hot metal simile has cropped up all over the world within recent years. Previously, the 'sulphurous' seems to have been more common, but one wonders if this was not a hangover from 'fire and brimstone' beliefs, since it was most often reported in conjunction with large and dangerous-looking occupants. But the most astonishing reports on stinks are, to me at least, those of the equally overpowering effluvia of aromatic natures, notably of violets! Yet, this last may have some real significance as it turns up repeatedly in poltergeist cases.

Metallic stinks would seem definitely to indicate metal, and thus machines. The possibility that a living entity could be made of metal brings a ready laugh from chemists, but iron, for instance, does have some funny properties, and there are some other enigmas connected with this that will crop up later. Besides, what many people call the smell of hot metal is actually one of hot hydrocarbon oils that are so intimately associated in our minds with machinery. By a 'sulphurous' stench is usually meant the rotten-egg effluvium of sulphureted hydrogen which, be it noted, is another product of life-forms. Then, there are the even more

nauseating stenches of rotting cabbage, of whale oil, and above all of rotting human flesh, which is utterly sickening due to its 'sweet' undertones. Thus, two of the three classes of stenches said to emanate from UAO's are not exclusive to machines, in fact, one type is definitely not typical of, even if known at all to, machines. Who ever heard of a machine giving out with an overpowering effluvium of violets? The esters that carry aromatic scents are products of living things.

When we turn to the subject of radiation emission by UAO's we at first seem to enter an entirely new field. UAO's are, of course, almost invariably said to emit light or lights of various kinds. They may glow generally or in part; they may appear to be internally lit, as seen through portholes; they may carry fixed riding lights; they may eject flames, as in exhausts; and they emit steady beams like searchlights or penetrating bolts of light. Their lights are of all colors of the spectrum, and they may change from one color to another or grade from one to another. In reports and stories of low flights, touchdowns, and landings, there is considerable emphasis on 'searchlights;' these have been reported since Roman times, long before the invention of electric or any other but naked flame light.

Now, we think of light as being the product of flame or of incandescence, both of which are incompatible with life-forms. However, the most 'powerful' emission of light that we know of on this earth is produced by a life-form – the luminous bacteria. This is what is called bioluminescence or 'cold light;' and that emitted by a single bacterium is proportionately greater for its size than all the power put out by one of our power plants for a large city. What is more, there are representatives of almost every class of animals, up from the bacteria to the fish, that produce cold light, and of incredible intensity. Moreover, animals emit red, white, blue, green, and amber light, and an endless procession of intertones of color. There is the famous 'stop-and-go' bug of South America, actually a beetle larva, that has green lights ahead and red behind. There are the pyrophorus beetles of the same area that have two blue-green lights on top of the

thorax by which they may be photographed in total darkness, and an amber light beneath their abdomen which they flash on landing or taking off. Then, there is a ridiculous-looking fish found in the Banda Sea in the East Indies, named *Photoblepharon*, that has two pockets below its eyes in which masses of luminous bacteria live, giving off their continuous, blinding light. The fish has eyelid-like shutters that it can draw across these pockets, so cutting off the light; but when they are open, two bright and concentrated beams jet downward so that the fish may scan the bottom for its food! In fact, light emission is not the perquisite of stars, volcanoes, and machines, and all but stars come second to life-forms in its propagation.

Another thing that UAO's have been repeatedly stated to do is produce electromagnetic interferences of various kinds. In its simplest form, this means cutting out the ignition systems, radios, and lights of automobiles. At another level, it has been more than broadly hinted now that at least some of the blackouts of electrical grids could have been caused by them. Certainly UAO's have been repeatedly observed over blacked-out areas – both before, during, and after the blackouts. We, like all other animals and plants, are basically electrically controlled devices, and both we and other animals have been shown to be able to produce marked electromagnetic effects on unshielded equipment, and possibly even on other life-forms. It does not take immense power to knock out a vast electric grid. A car battery is enough for this, even at distance. It's not brute force that is needed, but knowledge of the wavelength upon which the control mechanisms are operating. Cutting out car ignitions and the like by UAO's looks, suspiciously and alarmingly, like other evidence of intelligence or control by intelligencies.

Many reports of internal combustion engines stalling when a UAO approaches state that when they have passed, or gone away, or otherwise decided to turn off whatever directional power they have applied, the motors start up again spontaneously – but *without the use of the starters.* UAO's seem to be able to freeze flowing electrical power so

that when they 'let go' the correct potential is there, and the sparks fly again. But this does not explain how mechanical inertia of the stopped engine is spontaneously overcome.

Another form of radiation has many times been attributed to UAO's at low altitude. This is heat, but in a most specialised and singular form. While many people coming close to one have remarked on a general warmth, others have spoken of a prickly sensation of the skin; and several have reported sustaining burns or burn-like afflictions of the sensitive conjunctiva of the inner eyelids. Temporary blindness has also been reported, and not a few cases have been examined by medical doctors and the patients treated, sometimes for quite long periods.

But the most astonishing type of burns are those sustained on the body but *under* clothing or other protective shielding, and particularly behind metal. This is so puzzling that most people doubted it could happen. Even ufologists did not take such claims seriously until several soldiers on guard duty in a Brazilian Army depot were seriously burned under their uniforms after remaining at their posts while a large UAO maneuvered above them for some time. Technicians then pointed out that one had only to go to one's nearest modern bar and grill and ask for a packaged hot sandwich or hot dog in a rush, and watch the action. The comestibles may be popped into an ovenlike box for a couple of minutes and then served to you in their plastic wrappers, fully cooked and piping hot. The cooking was, of course, achieved by infrared light; the wrapping is hot but otherwise unaffected.

While we and other mammals and birds maintain a body temperature that may be many degrees above our surroundings, and thus radiate a certain amount of heat, we know of no life-form that can cook an adversary at distance! This ability on the part of some UAO's, along with the emission of radioactivity (either diffusely or beamed); certain of the lights like the apparent jet exhausts; and many of the sounds that they have been said to make would seem to be clear evidence that they are machines.

For all this, however, we should note the fact that noisy,

radiation-emitting UAO's are in the vast minority, and that they seem to conform to a single pattern, both in appearance and behavior. Also, despite some perhaps rather alarmist expressions on the part of crackpots, contactees, and even a few serious-minded ufologists, there does not seem to be any evidence that even this lot are deliberately aggressive or, as the USAF puts it, 'present any threat to the national security.' The deleterious effects on men – and animals and vegetation, which have also often been noted – would seem, rather, to be nothing more than a lack of sufficient shielding of the objects – in some cases combined with a bit too much inquisitiveness and bravado on the part of the people who have gotten too close to them, like a boy in Canada who allegedly touched one, causing second degree burns on his hand.

There is much indication that the occupants of these UAO's do not wish to be either molested or investigated too closely, and that they can and do take pretty strong measures to warn people off, and to 'defend' themselves. Their weapons appear to be of the highest competence, and far beyond anything we have devised, since they stun rather than kill.

Although individual UAO's have given no indication of aggression, they may, as a whole, present a real threat, and not only to our national security but to that of the whole earth. This is the possibility of a take-over. If you compare the over-all activities of these noise-making, heat-producing UAO's and map them, spatially on a globe, and analyse them, temporally, during the past half century, a most disturbing picture admittedly comes to light. The pattern applies only to one type of these objects – the lens-shaped and flat-hat-shaped lot with central domes on top. The pattern of their activities is exactly that which we have set up for the exploration of other heavenly bodies that we may reach. And exploration often, if not invariably, leads to exploitation.

You can see one rather nasty indication of their systematic investigation of, or interference with, our environment on a map of North America marked by different colored pins,

by years, on the spots where such UAO's have been reported. The map shows they are interested in and maneuvering over our drinking water sources. Such reports have rolled like a steady wave upon an expanding front from the far northwest of Canada and Alaska, south and east, until by 1967, the front formed a great curve from southern California to Long Island.

To an ecologist, this pattern is particularly alarming, as there is clear evidence that the UAO's have also systematically shown interest in one major vegetational belt after another, while maintaining a separate surveillance of mountainous regions where the ecology is different from the rest of the belts in which those mountains lie, due to altitude. Cause for still further alarm are the now voluminous reports of occupants collecting soil samples, mineral specimens, vegetation of all kinds, domestic animals – and we don't know what wild ones – and human beings, in a most selective manner. I was a professional collector of just such things (though I only took measurements and photographs of the humans) for museums and zoos for over twenty years, and I can tell you that, every time I read one of those reports even in the most offbeat publications, I get an eerie feeling. The very selectivity of the items said to have been chosen by the UAO's, convinces me as a professional collector that the reports are true – however way-out they may at first appear. In other words, the occupants apparently know what they are doing.

The behavior of this lot of UAO's would indeed seem to pose a serious threat to humanity, but, so far, it is only posed. It may never eventuate. An intelligent race of creatures may just be exploring our solar system, cataloging its content and activity, and storing the material away in museums, zoos, and laboratories; and, when finished with the job, they will just go away. We now have what appears to be some valid proof that this may have occurred at least once before, as we shall see in a later chapter. However, we do not know just what that bunch of visitors did to this world and its human inhabitants before they left, and there are some pretty

unpleasant things that *appear* to have happened to the earth just about the time they seem to have done so. However, in our own case today, the search of the moon and other planets is for new resources, and if any worthwhile are thus located, you may be sure that, first, we will move in by so-called diplomacy, and then begin to exploit. The take-over may start with trade, but it inevitably will lead to some kind of colonisation, and probably end up in outright conquest of the indigenous inhabitants – plant, animal and human. Our uninvited visitors might also have the same thing in mind for us. Remembering what happened to the North American Indians with the coming of the Europeans to this continent, is it little wonder that officialdom should take an interest in the behavior and actions of these UAO's?

CHAPTER VI

Could UFO's or UAO's be Alive?

Up to this point we have been classifying facts or alleged facts about these unidentified objects, their behavior, and their actions. But we have been treating the objects as things of themselves – regarding them as individual entities. It is manifest that they must be classified as life-forms, or as constructions put together by life-forms. They could, as a whole, of course, include both types. Therefore, our first question is simply, 'Which of them are which?' Put another way, 'Which of them *could* be of which type?' And, stemming from this, we naturally ask, 'Are there any recorded facts that might lead us to believe that they are only of one type or the other?'

Even if we were able to split the 'facts' into these two basic groups, we are still faced with further dichotomies. Those UAO's that by all reasonable logic would appear to be constructions must of necessity be constructed by something, and that something must be alive and probably intelligent. Therefore, we have to divorce the 'makers' or 'creators' from their 'machines' and analyse each separately. But then again, we have no guarantee (or even indication) that any 'pilots' of these 'machines' are the creators. They could be trained minions of lower breeds of intelligence, or what the science-fiction writers have called 'androids' (artificial animals), or they could be purely mechanical robots. In the absence of any definite facts on this aspect of the matter, we will have to split the 'occupants' of UAO's from their 'creators' and tackle the two types in separate ways.

But comes another problem – these androids and robots,

and their ilk. Here the whole business gets extraordinarily complicated because the distinction between 'animated machines' and 'mechanical animals' is a tough question to ask even biologists to answer. What is more, the problem is not confined to the occupants only, for the objects themselves could be of either type of construction. They could be plain inanimate machines, or life-forms, such as animals or plants.

One real trouble here is the definition of 'life'. Philosophers, mystics, and religionists have been issuing their thoughts upon this for ages, but it is only very recently – in the past two decades, actually – that scientists have given any real thought to the matter. Their findings, moreover, are astonishingly correlative, and this again is a valid reason for listening carefully to what they have to say and trying to understand it – even if it shakes up our most firm beliefs.

In considering this question, I would like first to examine the views expressed in an article entitled 'Mind, Matter and Quanta' by Dr Andrew A. Cochran, in the March–April, 1966, issue of *Main Currents*, which is the journal of The Foundation for Integrative Education, in New York. I cannot overstress the importance of this article. It demonstrates that we can no longer draw any hard and fast line between man and a mere quantum of energy in respect to what we call volition, or, as the dictionary has it, 'an act of willing or choosing; a state of decision or choice.'

We like to think that we, and we alone, command 'free choice' in almost everything, while even a highly intelligent chimpanzee, for instance, has more limited volition due to stronger ecological ties to his environment. Nevertheless, all apes display the exercise of considerable volition; so do the higher monkeys, and the lower primates, and the mammals called insectivores from which the primates seem to have been derived. When you come to study *their* ancestors, the marsupials, you find animals that appear incredibly stupid to us in many ways but which still choose their own actions much as we do. Cochran points out that you can go backward or downward through the whole gamut of life-forms on this planet, step by step, until you come to items like

viruses, and still find that the actions of the entities cannot be wholly explained by mere environmental influences alone. The entity still seems to have at least some choice as to its actions.

But then Cochran steps over the threshold that we have revered for so long – that line between what we have until recently called animate and inanimate. He makes this step simply because there are some beings which we call viruses, which look like and behave like living things for a time (or generation) and then go into a resting stage (or form) that is crystalline – yet from this stage in turn revert back to the animate form. Cochran then goes on down the line to the macromolecules, like the now famous DNA, which carries within its own organisation the pattern for the specific perfection of all higher forms of life; and thence to more simple molecules; to atoms; to their particles; and eventually to the elusive quanta. And he shows that one and all display some noticeable and definable volition. This, of course, presents us with still another dichotomy.

Does it mean that matter (and energy, or combinations of the two) has followed two lines of evolution, both starting from associations of quanta of energy, but one going off on the volitional path, the other on a nonvolitional? In other words, is the progression of chemical element, to molecule, to compound, to rock, to planet, to greater body truly inanimate? Or does this series *also* have a volitional aspect – though, perhaps, running on a much slower time-scale? In other words, could everything have, as it were, a will of its own? If so, the whole universe, and perhaps the whole cosmos, is in a manner of speaking, alive.

So what does all this deep philosophy have to do with UAO's? Actually, it is the basis of the whole problem and must, at least, be considered before we try to analyse the details. If everything is 'alive', and we cannot draw any hard line between that which we used to call the animate and the inanimate, we will have to be willing and able to attribute to hitherto unexplained objects (aerial or otherwise) certain features which to us are evidence of animation. Further, we

will have to take a second look at some of our own efforts such as the new computers. Have we already built, or will we be able to build, into these a volitional factor?

There is a book entitled, *Man's Place in the Dybosphere* by Richard R. Landers, which says that we have, and that such 'machines' are not only designing their offspring and ordering raw materials and parts for same, but are planning them just like DNA molecules, and building into them not only the ability but the 'wish' to reproduce. If we have got this far in a mere two million years of physical evolution and about four thousand years of mental evolution, couldn't other thinking creatures in an infinity of time have not only reached this point but have surpassed it by far?

This can mean only that we must take into account the possibility that even some of the machines among UAO's might also be 'alive', having been constructed along biological rather than mechanical principles. Starting with the wolf, we have bred creatures as ridiculously opposite as the Pekingese and the mastiff. Geneticists have been fiddling with chromosomes and producing sports, monsters, and completely artificial mutations. Now the biochemists are pushing the macromolecules (like DNA) around, and showing signs of being able in time to redirect their patterns and so produce quite new, and possibly superior, end-products. Thus, one can at least conceive of 'machines' made of protoplasmic substances – and even what we call flesh and blood, for that matter. But before we embark on that subject, we must clear up two other points.

First, the parameters of life on this planet are in every way vaster than any of us knew until recently – vaster than the average person yet realises. All life-forms on this planet, as far as we know, are based on hydrocarbons and the carbon-chain molecules. For the existence of these, oxygen is said to be essential. However, there are the anaerobic bacteria and others that use nitrogen instead. It has also been found that some bacteria – or living things at that level, and roughly of that degree of organisation – eat what we call stone. A good example was the discovery of a kind that was

literally chewing up the gargoyles and other carvings on the outside of the famous Cathedral of Notre Dame in Paris. There are also life-forms, and many of them of a much higher order, that transcend what we normally think of as the parameters of our physical environment for life. There are shrimplike crustaceans in North Africa that live in water very near the boiling point; there are small frogs in West Africa, and fish in the Mojave Desert, that live in tiny rills of water so hot as to be able to poach an egg. Worms live in vinegar, and there are larvae of certain flies that live in crude oil and other petroleum products. Even men can survive as much as 500 degrees Fahrenheit for a few seconds, and goldfish can be instantly frozen solid in liquid hydrogen and then be revived in cold water. It is even alleged that cats have survived a night in a pottery kiln, and rodents have lived underwater!

In fact, life as we know it, and even we ourselves, can take many more extremes than was once supposed, despite the fact that we normally live (and have wholly evolved) within only 50 of the millions of possible degrees of heat (centigrade) known in our universe. We are also confined in other ways. We can 'see' only within miniscule limits on the infinite electromagnetic band; and our hearing ability extends to what are, comparatively speaking, only a few cycles both up and down the scale. Yet we are inordinately 'tough'.

Just how much 'tougher' may not creatures be that have evolved elsewhere?

Then, there is another aspect to all this. We mentioned that there are viral-type entities that can be 'alive' in one generation but apparently 'dead' in the next. Viruses are to us funny things, right down there at the basis of life and observable only under very high-powered microscopes. That they behave in such odd ways is somehow acceptable.

But consider for a moment the even more amazing behavior of some much larger creatures that can be seen with the naked eye, and which live just about everywhere there is wet moss and subaerial vegetable debris. This is a group of animals known as the tardigrades, or bear animalcules. The

largest is barely two millimeters long, but they are highly organised, with a central nervous system, primitive eyes, four pairs of legs with grasping hooks at the end, sensitive bristles, an alimentary tract, a simple circulatory system, and most of the other complexities that higher animals have within their bodies in order to proceed with life. They are thought to be related to the spiders, scorpions, and such – creatures that display really extraordinary volition, quite apart from spinning geometrically perfect webs.

Tardigrades live in damp places, such as in gutters of houses or under peat moss. They have one very remarkable quality. Take some of these animals and place them on a small glass dish under a microscope in a little water and watch. Let the light illuminating the dish slowly evaporate the water. The poor little creatures slowly come to a stop. Then they begin to shrivel up. Finally, they are reduced to small specks that look like dust. If you switch to a higher powered lens, you will be able to see that they have been reduced to a bunch of crystals contained within an amorphous integument of 'stuff'. All the water from them has evaporated, and the remaining salts have crystallised out, while the remainder has just dried up like an old bit of fingernail. Thus desiccated, these specks may be placed under a bell jar, from which the air is evaporated, and then they can be left for, as far as we know, as long as you like.

However, *whenever you desire* – and this, to my mind, is a matter of great significance – you can replace the little glass dish under a microscope, add a few drops of water, and wait. In due course, the little specks of dust will start to swell up, the salt crystals dissolving, the integument swelling and assuming its original form. Then, some time later, the resuscitated tardigrades will start moving about again, apparently struggling with their funny little stubby legs to get a purchase on something. Add some moss or such for them to get a grip on. Turn off the light. And you must keep the supply of water coming. Finally, in due course, they will start to *breed*!

Now, what to make of this?

Here are manifestly living entities, life-forms, and of a fairly high order, but they can be reduced to what is to us complete inanimation, and for as long as we like! But then they come completely back to 'life'. (Tardigrades are not the only animals known to do this. The same thing has been observed with certain worms parasitic to palm trees, for example.)

Just what are the implications of this? Obviously, the line between 'living' and 'dead' does not exist. Tardigrades, however, very definitely display volition. What happens to the nonmaterial (or 'spiritual', I suppose you might call it) aspects of these creatures when they are nothing but crystalline specks? Does the nonmaterial part of the entity continue to reside in its purely material matter, or does it go elsewhere? And if it does the latter, how come *we* can call it back at our whim? Such a performance begins to smack of the powers attributed only to *God*. And this brings us to still another observation that calls for most serious contemplation.

A scientist in Germany was assigned after World War II to make certain surveys of the deep salt mines in Bavaria where the Nazis had stashed art and other treasures that they had plundered from museums and private collections all over Europe. This man, a biologist in its widest sense, happened to become interested in the salt itself, which was laid down under some overwarm sea about 200 million years ago. He took samples and analysed them, and one of the things that startled him was that living things turned up in the resultant solutions. Naturally, he assumed that these were the products of contamination during the taking of the samples, or later in his laboratory, since all air is choked with such living things as spores and bacteria. However, he refined his techniques with every conceivable precaution, and still the living things appeared until finally he was forced to the conclusion that they were resuscitated generations of creatures that had lived in the ancient sea and become fossilised along with the salt, to rest for millions of years before being 'brought back to life'. This bizarre experi-

ment was subsequently tested by others, starting from scratch and using both their own and the original methods. Always the same answer.

The seeds of plants, notably the Oriental lotus, are known to have survived for some thousands of years of inactivity, usually immersed in bogs, and there have been indications that many other plants and animals can survive – and notably in their normal resting or breeding stage – for very long periods. But active, mobile, and now (according to Cochran) volitional entities surviving for over 200 million years puts an entirely new complexion on existence as a whole.

We are next led to still another aspect of our particular problem – the new science of exobiology (extraterrestrial biology). This science has extended the possibilities of the parameters of life far beyond the previously accepted or even conceived ideas of even the most advanced thinkers. What is more, the very idea that there could be simple life elsewhere, off this little planet – although considered for several centuries – has been transcended in one leap within the past two years, and for the most part by two men – I. S. Shklovskii of the USSR and Carl Sagan of Harvard, our leading exobiologist. Not only have these two worked together to present the case for life elsewhere, they have in their classic volume, *Intelligent Life in the Universe*, leapfrogged right over the simple concepts and presented a case for the existence of, as the title of their book says, *intelligent* life elsewhere. This is an altogether different matter from the mere admission that some of the so-called 'organised bodies' alleged to have been found in stony meteorites represent the remnants of life elsewhere – truly fossilised, or held in suspension like the items in the rock salt. What Shklovskii and Sagan are saying is that some of such life could be of an order with both volition and organised intelligence, capable of building machines and indulging in exploration through space, if not through time.

And this brings us squarely back into the field of UAO's. Here we are confronted, on the one hand, with a

seemingly endless parade of evidence for the constant appearance in our skies of objects that behave like living things, or things under intelligent control. A rather large body of opinion among intelligent, sane, and properly trained persons asserts that these things must be controlled machines. On the other hand, we find other trained thinkers – exobiologists – asserting that there not only could be, but probably is, intelligent life elsewhere. Why haven't these two concepts (or 'beliefs' if you wish) been put together? Why do exobiologists continue to denigrate the suggestion that UAO's could be the products of their predicated intelligencies, while serious-minded ufologists, who insist UAO's are machines controlled by intelligencies, scoff whenever anybody suggests that they have observed occupants in these machines? Frankly, the situation is totally illogical. Either there are objects controlled by intelligences coming into our atmosphere and even landing here for one purpose or another, or there are not. If there are, some entities, or lifeforms must be at least controlling them. If there could be, or are, such entities elsewhere that would seem to have visited this planet throughout geological time, why should they not be doing so now; and why couldn't they be the occupants of the UAO's? Are we seriously asked to believe that all UAO's are imaginary? And, if so, are we also being asked to conclude that the concepts of the exobiologists are also the results of imagination? This is a paradox, but one of human psychology, not of reality.

We must then present still another paradox, and again one that seems to be of purely human making. About fifteen years ago, a theory was put forward independently by a number of people as to the nature of *some* UAO's. This evoked extreme and in some cases almost hysterical derision in just about all quarters, from the wildest eccentrics to the most august scientists. In view of the nature of the suggestion, it was to be expected that scientists at that time would totally ignore it because even exobiology was then unheard-of, but that contactees should also do so was somewhat of a surprise.

This theory has come to be known among the more specialised *aficionados* as the Wassilko-Serecki Theory, in deference to an Austrian titled lady of that name who devoted a fortune and untold time to backing any person or group with proper scientific training who expressed a desire to try and investigate properly any facet of life that did not conform to established belief or understanding. The Wassilko-Serecki Theory is simply that *some* UAO's could themselves be life-forms, indigenous to space and 'feeding' on pure energy. The argument put forward in support of this notion is equally simple: namely, that what we call animals feed on matter, but plants use both matter and energy in the form of sunlight to promote photosynthesis. Why, therefore, it was asked, could there not be material entities – perhaps highly tenuous or even diaphanous – that 'feed' exclusively on energy? Further, if there were such creatures, where would they most likely reside?

Since all matter is itself basically composed of mere energy-packets and since what we call solid matter is for the most part space, there is presumably no reason why such entities could not exist even in, for instance, solid rock or in the centers of stars. On the other hand, if they should be of tenuous composition, they would probably be more at home in and better served by the properties of an atmosphere (gaseous) or, better still, space, where there is comparatively little matter – and this very widely disseminated. This theory, therefore, suggested that there *could* be such life-forms, evolved and normally living in space, which occasionally wandered or 'fell' into our atmosphere. Further, there would be little reason for such life-forms to deliberately come into our atmosphere since 'raw' energy is plentiful in space – in the form of radiation from the stars – while much of it is blanketed by our magnetic envelope and the various layers of our gaseous atmosphere. However, when we (man) started to collect and disseminate energy, notably in the form of electricity and by broadcast, any such entities might come flocking down, literally to 'feed', as at free lunch counters.

That the contactees did not go for this theory was, I feel,

due to the fact that it offended their beliefs. Their theory is that UAO's are built and flown by creatures of intelligence superior to ours, and that they are coming here to help us mend our ways. So the very idea that even some of these objects could be sort of subamoebic blobs or globs absolutely without intelligence and imbued only with sense enough to find their food was insulting. While 'stealing some of their stuff', the idea also made their whole belief look a bit ridiculous. That scientists failed even to consider the matter is equally understandable and much more rational. Not even today have they wholly accepted the idea that 'life' might exist outside the chemical framework known for it on this planet. This – to me at least – is also somewhat odd, however, in view of the really extraordinary known breadth of those parameters.

We know that the nature of living things on this planet alone ranges from man to ultra-filterable viruses that may produce inanimate generations. So why should we balk at the suggestion that elsewhere it could range much further? What is so appalling – or impossible – about the suggestion of space-animals? If there can or may be intelligent life-forms so advanced as to be able to devise interplanetary, or insterstellar, or intergalactic travel, why couldn't there also be dumb, dreary, and practically insensate types of extraterrestrial life-forms? And, by the same token, why not all manner of intermediate forms? Is there any evidence for any of these types?

If there are living things either in our upper atmosphere or in space beyond that can and sometimes do come down to the surface of our earth, they could be 'electrical animals' (as we in fact are). They could produce light, emit stinks and noises and maybe even electromagnetic and other radiations – more especially if they are pure energy feeders. But what could they be composed of?

For some reason, there seems to be a vague impression in many quarters that if there are such entities, they would be tenuous, gelatinous, and silicon-based rather than carbon-based. At the same time, there are almost as many hints and

rumors that other of these alleged things, or objects, or entities, are metallic – but still not 'machines' or constructions. Later on, when we come to examine what has been reported of some of the occupants of landed UAO's, we will encounter a similar allegation but of a much more disturbing nature. This is to the effect that some of these occupants, notably the pygmy types, seem also to be made of metal or of some sort of ceramo-metal, since bullets are said to bounce off them, and knives driven at their bodies either glance off, buckle, or splinter.

The point is: If there are such machines, both they and any pilots or occupants of them must also be made of *something*. What could this be? It is useless to assume that life is possible only on a hydrocarbon basis. Even on this planet this is not entirely the case. Molecular chains – although more limited – linked to the element silicon are known, and iron seems also to be capable of such capture. We do not know what these two elements might give rise to in other circumstances; nor do we really know the limits of carbon itself, in this respect. The number of known carbon-based (or linked) molecules is overwhelming, and the possibility of more is apparently almost unlimited. Carbon, silicon, and iron are not the only elements that could form molecular chains – given other environmental conditions. Space-dwelling entities based on silicon strings, or even little, green-uniformed humanoids with bodies based on a ferrous link, are not 'impossible' – though, according to our present knowledge, highly improbable.

Has anything definite ever been reported to support the theory that some UAO's are in themselves living entities? The answer may just possibly be 'yes'.

On March 8th, 1962, a rather bland news report came out of Hobart, Australia, the capital of the island province of Tasmania. This stated, and I quote: 'MONSTER MAY BE BIG FIND. Scientists engaged in a search for a mystery "monster" washed ashore at Sandy Cape may have discovered a scientific curiosity.'

Now what, you may legitimately ask at this stage, has this

to do with UAO's?

If I may be forgiven for saying so, one of the drawbacks of our current culture – or, rather, of the present stage of our intellectual development – is lack of coordination of information. Knowledge has increased so much that it has become overspecialised and overcompartmentalised, and real experts in one field usually have not the foggiest notion what is going on in any other. What is worse, they tend to ignore and even to scoff at the findings of scientists in fields other than their own. This is a poor attitude particularly in the borderland fields of search (as opposed to research) such as ufology. Ufologists are as one-track-minded as anybody else, and far more bombastic about their speciality. They have for the most part come to the subject from the field of engineering, or at least from classic or nuclear physics. The mere suggestion that there could also be a biological aspect to their subject invariably seems to upset them.

In the case of which we now speak, ufologists simply did not appear at all. If any of them ever read of it, they probably just turned the page, on the grounds that it was a 'sea monster story' and therefore of no possible interest to them. Yet, this case has several aspects that should be of the greatest interest to ufologists.

In 1960, three sheep farmers owning land adjacent to the extensive and relatively unvisited sand beaches of south-western Tasmania found an enormous object washed ashore. It was quite unlike anything they had seen before, though they knew the marine life of that coast very well. During two years, this object, roughly 20 feet in diameter, was gradually washed some 12 miles down the coast, sometimes apparently being taken out to sea and then washed ashore again, and sometimes being partially or wholly covered over by sand during storms. Eventually, it came to rest on the south side of Sandy Cape.

Only then did news of it reach a wealthy amateur naturalist who was a backer of the museum in Hobart. He decided to go and look at it, and took along with him an

official government zoologist. They tried to obtain samples of the 'flesh' of the object, but failed since even an ax would not cut it. But they took photographs, and from these a zoologist in the museum composed a sketch. The rather calm little news squib quoted above was put on the wire services. Then the fun began, and for some reason the whole world went into an uproar.

The most incredible drivel was stated by all manner of people who should have known better, as well as by many others who knew nothing of zoology and had never been nearer than 15,000 miles to Tasmania. The Australian government got into the act. Expeditions were organised. But then some very strange things began to happen. The first professional scientist to examine the thing suddenly became – in various references to him – 'a biological student'; his 'Dr' was dropped; and he was no longer 'an official of the Australian CSIR' – Council for Scientific and Industrial Research. Next, despite a statement that no samples were obtained, alleged samples of the 'beast' were said to have been analysed on the mainland by first the wheat and then the wool technologists of CSIR. The reports of these two departments conflicted and also contained a number of seemingly illogical and irrelevant statements. Then, the minister of the federal government in charge of the Navy (and, incidentally, of the CSIR –) turned up unannounced in a town named Launceston on the northern coast of Tasmania. This official immediately clamped a complete ban on anybody – even a special representative of the American National Geographic Society, who had flown over from the Australian mainland in a chartered helicopter – going near the Sandy Cape area.

The local press was naturally furious. The ban was imposed fifteen days after the official pronouncements, made on the original party's finding and/or alleged (and/or denied) samples, had stated that a very high-echelon team of scientists, including heads of departments from Canberra, was flying in to conduct a thorough investigation on the spot, which was expected to take them at least three weeks.

(Actually, they were back in one day!) Moreover, within 24 hours after their return, it was officially announced that the 'monster' was only a couple of 12-foot hunks of much decomposed whale blubber. This also was said to have been confirmed by CSIR laboratories on the mainland, despite the fact that the same laboratories had failed to identify the first specimens in over two weeks. No reports of these later analyses were ever issued or published, and – except for the ban – the matter was thunderingly dropped.

Careful analysis of literally hundreds of firsthand reports and correspondence at the time brought to light some further extremely odd facts. First, the general gobbledygook published was so much worse and more asinine than that of even the biggest case of a sea-monster scare, that it clearly looked as if the facts had been deliberately scrambled. Second, one sensible newsman did manage to get to the *original* corpse (or whatever it was) and, holding a cigarette lighter to its edge, after a stalwart police sergeant had failed to cut it with an ax, noted (in print) that the 'flesh' *withdrew* precipitately from the flame, but then returned to its previous contour. Third, the material that the official team dug up from the sand and collected – and possibly analysed – was not from the original object but came from the *north* side of Sandy Cape nearly 20 miles away. Fourth, even this material was stashed in a government power-plant compound, behind an electrified fence and under guard, overnight, before being trucked to Hobart the next day. Fifth, the official announcement on the whale-blubber composition of this material was issued *before* that truck had time to arrive in Hobart.

These little discrepancies were curious enough, but the major aspect of the whole story has been mostly overlooked. What was so all-fired important to the busy government of a large country about (a) an alleged, beached 'sea monster', and (b) a few hunks of decomposed whale blubber? Why the ban on all visits to the area and the complete press censorship? Just this, I would suggest:

The moment the original sketch by the Hobart museum man was published, it was discovered that no less than seven

other similar monsters had been reported found and examined on the south coast of Australia and around Tasmania during the previous twenty years and right up to that week. But worse, somebody issued a scathing pronouncement upon the matter, stating that 'these things do not come from deep cold water – they come down from the sky and land in the sea.' On publication of this statement, officials swept into action, issuing bans and transporting all manner of top scientists back and forth. Yet, the initial thing had lain on a beach for over two years!

Almost every week I get a report of an alleged sea monster that has washed up somewhere around the world, and in only half a dozen cases that I have on file – and only a dozen that Dr Bernard Heuvelmans has been able to find in preparing his monumental work on sea monsters, covering 200 years – has anybody been able to persuade even a game warden or fishery inspector, let alone a head of a government biological department, to even so much as go and look at the thing.

My point here is that officials are a great deal more interested in and probably knowledgeable about such matters than we know. It took over five years to get the British Royal Air Force to analyse the first film taken of a Loch Ness monster, though this is one of the best known mysteries in the world and questions had several times been asked about it in the British Parliament. Yet here we find a whole government swinging into action on a single report of an amateur naturalist, a museum man's sketch, and the say-so of a young biologist – whom they then denigrated and reduced in rank to a mere 'student of biology'. (Actually, the gentleman *was* an employee of CSIR, held a degree in biological sciences, and was officially in charge of the initial investigation.)

What is so impossible about the suggestion that for some reason a number of space creatures got into difficulties on low approach over the general area of Tasmania, and crash-landed in the ocean nearby in a crippled condition? It should be mentioned that, despite a lot of talk about 'getting the

bones' of this globster, none were ever found or even suggested, while the 'flesh' was first said to be like that of a 'crayfish', then to be uncuttable with an ax, then to retreat from a flame as if it were still alive; to be fresh after two years, and then to have been utterly decomposed in those two weeks – we begin to see why no analysis of either this globster's 'flesh' or even that of the so-called decomposed whale blubber has ever been published. If the thing – the first one, that is – *was* a crashed and crippled space creature and still 'alive', and the government got wind of it, no wonder there was a sort of jazz-hop among the higher levels to 'get that thing out of there' or, alternatively, to dig up a red herring like some good dead whale – pronto. The latter seems to have come to hand – most conveniently and not too far away at that – so the whole area was immediately closed to newsmen and other prying eyes, especially with cigarette lighters! Incidentally, bits of rotten whales are a common feature all around Tasmania as a result of the circum-Antarctic oceanic currents that wash up bits and pieces from the international whaling industry farther south, and especially after really bad storms. In fact, if there had not been any already there, some could quite well have been obtained in short order and dumped there to be examined at leisure by an official party.

Altogether, as a biologist, I am left with a most unpleasant feeling about this whole case. The story as printed in the local press, and the official correspondence and documents I have been able to receive or have seen, just does not conform to reality, and the whole situation seems terribly strange. If it was just another phony sea monster, then let's have done with it – though I would wish that all governments would always take as much pains with such items, as thereby we might gain some rather interesting new zoological specimens. If it was something else, either let us hear about it, or be told simply that it 'is not in the interest of national security' – then we'll drop it.

This is not by any means the only case of this nature on which I have details but, in the interests of space in this

book, it must suffice to demonstrate the sort of evidence we have of the possibility that *some* UAO's are themselves space creatures. Again, I would stress that this does not mean that all UAO's are, or even could be. To the contrary, there is almost overwhelming evidence that the majority of them are not – that the rest are indeed machines, or at least constructions manufactured by other living entities.

Let me present you with an analogy. For some hundreds of millions of years, as far as geologists have been able to figure out, certain invertebrate (and, thus, in our opinion, rather lowly) animals have been roaring, rushing, or squirting about the sea by jet propulsion. These are the molluscan order called the cephalopods, which includes the octopuses, cuttlefish, and squids. They use water, rather than air, for expulsion, and they eject this most forcibly through a nozzle-like structure under their necks, having filled their spindle-shaped body-sacs with it. Thus, they can dart backward at speeds that exceed anything else living in water.

Now, in 1938 a Britisher named Frank Whittle finally got a mechanical jet engine working, and this ran upon the same principle as that of the squids. (Note: It was not a rocket or reaction engine dependent upon internal combustion alone.) I do not know whether Whittle at any time studied the propulsive machinery of the squids, but I think it quite likely that he did, though the basic principle itself is really very simple and obvious. But before I go further, another analogy:

When we first found it necessary to establish ourselves within the Arctic Circle for defense purposes, we found that flying near the pole was impossible with our ordinary magnetic compasses 'trained' to the magnetic pole – they just spun around or pointed to that point, which is rather far away from the axial pole. Further, there are several months of darkness at the pole but also things called 'white-outs', impenetrable mists reaching upward from the top of the ice sometimes to considerable heights, excluding all possibility of taking any fixes on stars. Therefore, some kind of 'compass' or other navigational aid was desperately needed. To make a long story short, one was developed from studies of the lowly horseshoe crab common to our eastern seaboard, which was found to have the ability to find its way home by use of the polarisation of sunlight. These crawling, shallow-sea creatures have only to take a look at the sky and are thereby able to perceive in just what direction the 'rays' of the sun are travelling. At our distance from the sun the rays are virtually parallel, though of course they are a segment of a vast circle. It was found that these animals, having certain fixes on points on the surface of their earth, and one such fix on the exact position of the sun, can, as they say, 'figure the angles' and unerringly orient themselves. On the basis of these animals, a form of compass was developed by which our fliers can find their way about the inner polar regions where magnetic compasses do not work and where the stars may often be invisible for days on end.

If we have achieved such seemingly intricate competence by duplicating or copying what other life-forms have been doing for millions of years, what may not other intelligent beings, perhaps with millennia or millions or billions of years' head-starts on us, have done? Let us suppose that there are space creatures which even more millennia ago 'discovered' how to evolve, live, and breed in what we call space, and how to move about in it. Why could not intelligent beings, evolved on other gross solid bodies such as this planet, have in time come to discover their existence and study their habits? Let us further suppose that they could have done so. What might be the answer?

Intelligent, corporate entities only a little more advanced than ourselves at the present stage of our knowledge might well have found out how these space creatures were constituted and how they obtained their energy (food), and how they then used some of that energy to move about. Would not such discoveries be of inestimably greater importance to such intelligent beings than some new and slightly more efficient liquid or solid fuel to make great rockets go 'bang' or 'pop', and so roar off their planet?

Given food, a plodding ox is ultimately a great deal more efficient than a tractor which is dependent upon a constant supply of spare parts and of fuel which must be piped or shipped in over thousands of miles from wells in another country. The number of things that can go wrong with the ox is almost negligible compared to the things that can go wrong with the tractor. Machines patterned on life-forms will always be better, more efficient, and more reliable than anything we can think up and construct with metal, nuts, and bolts.

It is my contention that at least some of the UAO's that have visited us in the past, and which are now still visiting this planet, are indeed constructions manufactured by intelligent entities, but that they are not 'machines' as we think of them. But here our inquiry really gets complicated because we find ourselves confronted with a considerable number of alternatives.

First, we must face the possibility of 'machines' constructed along biological lines, and possibly copied from already existing life-forms that had already overcome certain basic problems of life in 'space' and of movement through it. Second, we must also face up to the possibility of intelligences constructing what we would otherwise call 'animals' or new 'life-forms', either by breeding them – as we do dogs, cattle, etc. – or by purely biochemical means, as by manipulating the macromolecules that, like DNA, carry the 'pattern' for the life-form that is to develop from an ovum or other primary source.

Then again, we cannot rule out entirely the so-called 'androids' of the science-fiction writers. 'Android' literally means an artificial 'humanoid', constructed biologically; but the same term may be applied to artificial reproductions – or similes of them – made by other intelligent life-forms, of themselves. Thus, an intelligent creature from a planet revolving around, say, Antares might discover how to make replicas of (him)self that would look like him but still be entirely constructed and under his control.

Finally, there is the matter of pure robots. We already

have machines that perform many robotic functions, even if they are not constructed in the image of human beings. Items like washing machines, remote-controlled mowers, and so forth are, in fact, robots. And we have computers, which are something quite else. Regardless of whether they think or not, they certainly perform a number of functions that we alone used to be able to undertake – and they perform much faster, better, and generally more efficiently than we do. As we have seen some time back, such machines are already being programmed to plan their own offspring, order the required raw materials, and then build them.

So, we *could* have space-creatures of lower or higher intelligence; 'space-people-droids'; sensible robots; or machines – either made with nuts and bolts or biologically in a variety of ways.

CHAPTER VII

Other Strange Things Come Down from the Sky

More unexplained things come down from the sky than merely UAO's or UFO's. We can classify these things into three types: (1) certain 'organised bodies' of microscopic size that have been found in some stony meteorites, (2) 'falls' from the sky of organic substances and of obviously manufactured objects, and (3) those peculiar things that have come to be called the globsters. All three types are absolutely concrete in that the items are real, not mere reports. Any speculation comes in the interpretation of what these things represent.

The matter of the organised bodies in meteorites has been and still is being widely and somewhat wildly debated. It has been extensively publicised not only in technical literature but in the popular press. One school of thought held by a group of scientists in Chicago says these items are caused by contamination of the meteorites by terrestrial protogeans. Another school of thought led by New York scientists believes that these organised bodies arrived on this earth in the meteorites. Currently, scientific opinion is increasingly favoring the second premise. The debate hinges on finding proof that these things are genuine fossils entrapped in stone that presumably once formed the crust of some astronomical body that supported life, or, alternatively, the much more difficult exercise of proving that they did not.

The debate was initiated by the positive identification of certain hydrocarbons of a coal-like nature in some otherwise stony meteorites that were demonstrated, to the satisfaction of even the most cautious, to have fallen from the sky. Just

because almost all life as we know it is hydrocarbon-based does not, of course, mean that the presence of such stuff must indicate life. Nonetheless, such an occurrence raises the probability to a pretty high order; one, in fact, that warrants serious consideration and study. This was duly undertaken. More than one investigator, on examining slices of meteorites of this type, perceived objects of an organised nature embedded in the matrix, just as fossils are embedded and wholly enveloped in rocks of our planet's surface. Some of these bodies looked surprisingly like certain lowly forms of microscopic life known to exist today on this earth. But others were quite unlike anything ever recorded here. This proliferated the problem at the outset – and in two ways.

The presence of those bodies that did look like known forms greatly enhanced the suspicion that they might all be evidence of contamination of the meteoritic material after it had landed or entered our atmosphere. Although it is hard to explain how anything can get completely *into* a solid body, biologists have become extremely cautious on this subject since stone-eating bacteria have been brought to light, and living things, or bodies behaving like living things, have been found almost everywhere and in everything. Perhaps the most startling discovery was the disclosure that the water jacketing an atomic pile was found to be so teeming with life after some years as to threaten clogging. This water was so 'hot' that it had been considered not only lethal to any life-form but capable of disrupting some molecules and even atoms.

On the other hand, the identification of bodies that did *not* look like anything we know presented almost as difficult a problem. To leap to the conclusion that they must therefore have come from elsewhere would be wholly unscientific, because nobody can claim that we have identified all life-forms on this earth and in its atmosphere, more especially below the visual level. The presence of such unknown items therefore proves nothing, and the interpretation of their presence is speculative. Hence the great debate. However, if they are extraterrestrial, it could mean only that there is life

elsewhere. But such an affirmative answer must lean heavily upon evidence from other sources. The question as to whether there is any corollary or supporting evidence we will take up in a moment. In the meantime, one naturally and rightly would like to know more of the so-called organised bodies and just why scientists are so interested in them. Despite all the popularisation of this subject, the facts are not easily comprehended.

Although nothing has definitely been proven regarding these organised bodies, some bold statements have been made in leading scientific journals, such as the British publication *Nature*, by scientists of unquestionable integrity and resource. Not only do these statements submit numerous valid reasons why these things cannot be contamination, they list many cogent arguments as to why some of them cannot be terrestrial in origin. But further, during the course of this debate – which started in the early 1960's – scientists discovered that some of the items under discussion were not just similitudes of viruses, protogeans, and macromolecules, but appeared to be minute specimens of much more highly organised bodies like algae or seaweeds.

Over eighty years ago, Otto Hahn, a German geologist, published a large work that included photographs of sections of stony meteorites that had fallen in Hungary sixteen years before, which showed complex 'fossils' that the author interpreted as being corals, sponges, and possibly even crinoids (a group of sessile, stalked relatives of the starfishes). Although Hahn was laughed out of court generally, there were those of the highest standing who examined his evidence and stated for the record that some of the items did indeed appear to resemble minute corals and sponges, organised as those creatures are on this earth. The whole notion was, at that time, so extreme that nothing much was heard of it until the 1950's. Then we entered the Space Age, and in practically no time at all, we heard from all manner of scientists of irreproachable standing in several fields that other 'bodies' found in other meteorites also look like algae. The inference here may be missed by those not specifically

interested in basic biological matters. It is this:

Macromolecules (such as DNA, ultrafilterable viruses, and other protogeans, and even more highly organised entities such as bacteria) can exist in a wide variety of environments from a tenuous atmosphere to solid rock, but life-forms as complex as algae, let alone corals or sponges, cannot do so. The more complex forms require water – or possibly some other liquid, though this is unlikely – in which to live and evolve. What is more, it has been pointed out by several of the investigators of these things in meteorites that they occur in numbers almost, if not exactly, proportional to similar fossils found in sediments laid down beneath earthly seas. So that it would appear that the environment where they once lived should have at least as much water as our planet's surface. But even this is not the whole story.

A letter that was published in *Science*, a mouthpiece of proper scientific endeavor in this country, went so far as to suggest that these organised bodies carried coded messages. The idea here is that an advanced civilisation, having discovered the coding for organisation carried by such macromolecules as DNA, might in time learn how to manufacture the likes to carry the 'germ' of intelligent beings or, alternatively, codes of information that could be read by another civilisation reaching a similar stage of understanding. This is a pretty startling suggestion to see the light of day in a publication such as *Science*.

It has also been suggested, in equally august scientific publications, that some of these 'organised bodies' in meteorites may not be fossils in the strict sense, but life-forms in a sort of suspended animation, like the 'bodies' in the salt mines. So, in 1960, Dr Frederick D. Sisler, a microbiologist with the U.S. Geological Survey, set out to investigate this question, and did cultivate viable microorganisms in the most perfectly sterile conditions known. He cultivated the organisms from material taken from a meteorite that fell in Kentucky in 1950.

If, then, we have gone this far in our thinking upon one

aspect of extraterrestrial life, what is the block against the other – the subject of 'falls' of other things from the sky?

Just as the reality of meteors was for a long time denied, so also have these falls been scoffed at. But unlike meteorites, which have been mostly gathered by country bumpkins, some of the other strange things from the sky have fallen literally at the feet of many savants. The best recorded case is that in which a number of fish rained down on Louisiana, on October 23rd, 1947. This too was reported in *Science*, under the heading, 'Do Fish Fall from the Sky?' (in Comments and Communications; Vol. 109, 22 April, 1949):

'In view of the prevailing skepticism about rains of fish, my own observations of this phenomenon may interest the readers of *Science*.

'A rainfall of fish occurred on October 23, 1947, in Marksville, Louisiana, while I was conducting biological investigations for the Department of Wild Life and Fisheries. In the morning of that day, between seven and eight o'clock, fish ranging from two to nine inches in length fell on the streets and in yards, mystifying the citizens of that southern town. I was in the restaurant with my wife having breakfast when the waitress informed us that fish were falling from the sky. We went immediately to collect some of the fish. The people of the town were excited. The director of the Marksville Bank, J. M. Barham, said he had discovered upon arising from bed that fish had fallen by hundreds in his yard, and in the adjacent yard of Mrs J. W. Joffrion. The cashier of the same bank, J. E. Gremillion, and two merchants, E. A. Blanchard and J. M. Brouilette, were struck by falling fish as they walked toward their places of business about 7:45 a.m. There were spots on Main Street, in the vicinity of the bank (a half block from the restaurant) averaging one fish per square yard. Automobiles and trucks were running over them. Fish also fell on the roofs of houses.

'They were freshwater fish native to local waters, and belonging to the following species: Large-mouth Black Bass

(*Micropterus salmoides*), Goggle-eyes (*Chaenobryttus coronarius*), two species of sunfish (*Lepomis*), several of minnows, and Hickory Shad (*Pomolobus medioris*). The latter (last) species were the most common. I personally collected from Main Street and several yards on Monroe Street, a large jar of perfect specimens, and preserved them in formalin, in order to distribute them among various museums. A local citizen who was struck by a fish told me that the fish were frozen; however, the specimens I collected, although cold, were not frozen. There is at least one record, in 1896 at Essen, Germany, of frozen fish falling from the sky. The largest fish in my collection was a Large-mouth Black Bass, 9½ inches long. The largest falling fish on record was reported from India and weighed over six pounds.

'The fish that fell in Marksville were absolutely fresh, and were fit for human consumption. The area in which they fell was approximately 1,000 feet long and about 75 to 80 feet wide, extending in a north-southerly direction, and was covered unevenly by fish. The actual falling of the fish occurred in somewhat short intervals, during foggy and comparatively calm weather. The velocity of the wind on the ground did not exceed eight miles per hour. The New Orleans weather bureau had no report of any large tornado, or updraft in the vicinity of Marksville at that time. However, James Nelson Gowanloch, chief biologist for the Louisiana Department of Wild Life and Fisheries, and I had noticed the presence of numerous small tornadoes, or 'devil dusters', the day before the 'rain of fish' in Marksville. Fish rains have nearly always been described as being accompanied by violent thunderstorms and heavy rains. This, however, was not the case in Marksville.

'Certainly occurrences of this nature are rare, and are not always reported, but nevertheless they are well known. The first mention of the phenomenon was made by Athanaseus in his *De pluvia piscum* nearly two thousand years ago, and E. W. Gudger, in his four collective articles, reports 78 cases of falling fish from the sky. There is no reason for anyone to devaluate the scientific evidence. Many people have never

seen tornadoes, but they do not doubt them, and they accept the fact that wind can lift and carry heavy objects. Why can't fish be lifted with water and carried by the whirlwind?'

A. D. BAJKOV,
Oyster Laboratory,
Biloxi, Mississippi.

To present the proven incidences of falls would necessitate a huge volume. And to record all that has been reported of the matter since ancient times would require several volumes. The variety of items is also seemingly endless. It ranges from gaseous clouds to manufactured metallic objects, and includes a wide range of organic substances and actual plants and animals. The commonest animals are fish and frogs, and most of the rest are other aquatic animals. The commonest vegetable substances seem to be hay or straw. Too many cases of 'falls' have been witnessed by too many people at the same time for the existence of this phenomenon to be questioned, so that the whole problem has long since entered the 'How?' stage. And it is here that we run into some real enigmas, several of which force us to take this matter into consideration while investigating UAO's.

Naturally, the first explanation given for falls is that these things were carried aloft in whirlwinds or tornadoes, then were transported on high and finally dropped elsewhere. This suggestion is most questionable on almost every count, not least that there is no evidence that material thus raised by such winds ever travels any considerable distance from the path of the wind. Most of these falls come down out of comparatively still skies, often in torrential rain but nowhere near where any whirlwind or tornado has been reported. Also, the sheer volume of the material deposited is often more than even ardent skeptics can honestly attribute to even a large tornado at close quarters. But the strangest feature of all is the many cases in which animals *of only one kind* fall. They may all be of the same size, or they may vary greatly in size. How, we may well ask, can any wind pick up only one kind of fish or frog without

picking up other items of similar size or weight? A tornado passing over open water could pick up a school of one species of fish, but how can it pick up tons of one kind of periwinkle – a small marine 'snail' that clings to rocks between tide levels – such as landed on a mile-long area near Worcester, England, in 1881. (Worcester happens also to be 50 miles from the sea, tornadoes are unknown in that area, and no other meteorological freak had been reported.)

Unfortunately the animals that have been definitely witnessed falling have seldom been properly examined, described and identified, or even preserved. In most cases when samples have been submitted to competent zoologists, they have been identified as known species, as Dr Bajkov records, and they are usually local fauna. However, some are far removed from their natural habitat, and there are records of unknown species falling. In the mountains of West Africa, I witnessed what our party could only assume was a fall of frogs of a species that we had never seen in nearly a year collecting frogs specifically. Although the species later turned out to have been previously described, it was a rare *lowland* type. We were north of the lowlands and the winds at that time of year blew from the north to south. The fall occurred in a gentle rain. Nothing else came down with the frogs, as we could see by examining the almost horizontal parts of our tent and work-shelter roofs.

Perhaps all species of animals that 'fall' could be identified with known or yet-to-be-discovered earthbound forms. If so, this kind of fall would not seem to have anything to do with UFO's or UAO's – it would appear to be a wholly terrestrial phenomenon.

But apart from the animals and their strange selection, a wild assortment of other things has fallen that cannot be matched on earth.

From time to time throughout history blobs both great and small, or particulated masses of curious forms of 'jelly', have been found on the ground where UAO's have been observed to hover or land. This material or materials seems always to be in the process of vaporising. And it has usually been

reported to be very cold, even to the point of causing 'burns', as by dry ice, on those who touched it. If any color has been ascribed to it, it is usually mauve or purplish. In many cases the substance is said to have had about the consistency of frozen broth and to have behaved like that when prodded or cut. In some cases, however, it is said to have been so tough that it could not be cut with a sharp ax – but it nonetheless dissolved or vaporised.

There are those who have jumped to the conclusion that this material represents the 'body' of the space animals envisaged by the Wassilko-Serecki Theory. This may or may not be so but, although some samples are said to have been examined in chemical laboratories, nothing definite has even been suggested as to its nature. The only solid offering has been that the material in some cases seems to be silicon-based, rather than hydrocarbon. But, in spite of considerable effort, I have been unable to obtain copies of any laboratory analyses. Nonetheless, Major Donald Keyhoe of the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena had some such substance in a ground-glass-topped bottle for some time; and the city police of Philadelphia definitely took specimens in 1950 from a mass that landed on a suburban street in daylight. Dr Condon's research team will presumably be able to track down these and other analyses; and perhaps some samples may still be available.

Another substance that has fallen from the sky is called 'angel-hair'. This substance is a shredded material of quite a variety of unidentified compositions, ranging from fine, metallic ribbons (not unlike Christmas tree tinsel or the thin aluminum strips released in the air to abort enemy radar) to positively enormous masses of ultrafine filaments that look like cobweb. The latter type has sometimes festooned mile after mile of trees and telephone lines. It seems always to be in the process of evaporation when observed, and to vanish – especially when touched by humans – though often leaving, it is said, either a greasy or sticky feeling on the skin.

The first reaction to a report of angel-hair is, perhaps

naturally, that it is a case of a fall of true spider web, since the young of various spiders spin strands which, when massive enough, act as parachutes and lift the tiny creatures into the air. When thousands or millions of baby spiders do this in any given area, quite a lot of webbing may thus be wafted aloft, and the animals are then said to be migrating. This, of course, is not the case at all. They are simply being wafted by the wind to another locality. What is more, in only a few instances of reported angel-hair falls have any little spiders been found in or even near the masses. Besides, most angel-hair appears to be initially metallic, and is often described as looking like lead, nickel, or chrome.

Then there are other falls of more prosaic items that have been positively identified, but the fall of which seems paradoxical. Notable among these latter are enormous volumes of blood and of shredded flesh. If such a fall was the result of, say, a herd of cattle being carried aloft in a tornado, by what process does the wind do such a neat butchering job, and where do the bones, fat, entrails, and other portions of the animals go?'

Sometimes just the opposite of falls takes place. There was a 60 by 20 foot wooden chicken coop with a concrete base on my land when I bought the property, and I subsequently met three brothers who were brought up in our house. They told me that in 1928 a tornado came through and lifted the upper story of the chicken house, along with its roof and 2000 white chickens, and carried it right over the hill in a northeasterly direction. However, while white feathers covered a wide path across the open countryside beyond for seven miles, not one single chicken body was ever found, nor were any of the roof sheetings.

There are many witnessed reports of large objects going up in whirlwinds, but which are not reported as subsequently coming down. This includes whole barns. At the same time, there are almost as many reports of similar objects, as large as garages, that have similarly just vanished when *no* wind was heard or felt in the areas. These are reports that I feel should be thoroughly investigated in a proper scientific

manner, as they would seem to indicate the existence of some natural procedure or procedures. Their explanation might go a long way to unraveling some of the greater mysteries of ufology, as we shall see later.

Some ufologists have indulged in seemingly wild speculation as to these events. Two of these suggestions, however strange they may at first sound, will nevertheless have to be considered in due course and must be mentioned here. The first and oldest is that certain types of tornadoes and lesser whirlwinds are actually collecting methods used by UAO's, working just as we may do with a vacuum cleaner. The second is really a corollary of this and envisages some UAO's as laboratories for biological or other researches. The idea here is that the falls of fish, frogs, meat, blood, and so forth are the unwanted items of freezing, canning, or butchering procedures, or the results of breeding or other experiments carried on in nearby space, but dumped back on this earth to avoid contamination of other gross bodies, either natural or artificial – that is, the homelands or the machines of the UAO manufacturers. Evidence that some UAO's may indeed be traveling laboratories specially designed for genetical investigations has recently sprung at us from quite another source. This is the now-famous case of Mr and Mrs Barney Hill, who claim they were captured and examined by beings on a landed space craft. A number of similar cases have come to light, in which people insist that UAO occupants abducted them for examination and seemed primarily interested in matters of sex, breeding procedure, and genetics.

The most enigmatic of all falls are the manufactured items. The number of these that have now been reported is startling. I stress the word reported here, because these items do not come down in showers but usually singly, they have seldom been witnessed falling by more than one or two persons, and for the most part they look like items made by us. There is nobody today who can identify all the parts of all the flying machines, rockets, satellites, and so forth that we are sending aloft, so that most of these falls are immediately tagged

'fell from a plane'. However, some of these things are recorded from long before the first airplane flew, and some have been found in sedimentary rock strata laid down millions of years before man is thought to have evolved on this planet. Then again, I know of one case personally, which was well witnessed and attested to, that brings another factor into play.

This occurred in 1953, and I stress this date as it was long before the first Sputnik went aloft. Two friends of mine, interested in American folklore and Colonial history, spent their summer vacation at my home near the Jersey-Pennsylvania border. They passed their days calling upon all the oldest families of the countryside on both sides of the border and, being very tactful and well versed in their subject, they collected the most extraordinary amount of information along with all manner of old manuscripts and other records from the people they called upon.

One family, which proved to be a treasure trove, was composed of a round score of members, of four generations, who owned a large farm and much wooded acreage in the hills behind. My friends, Stanley Rowe and Umberto Orsi, became greatly attached to these people and visited them almost every day on their way to or from other hunting grounds. They were of Dutch origin, and their family had occupied the land for generations. They were people of substance and higher education, and had the highest standing in the community. As they came to know my friends, they lost their inbred suspicions of outlanders – especially the youngsters.

One day, while Stan and Umberto were taking coffee in the kitchen, one of the younger girls put a strange little light metal cylinder on the table in front of Stan. It was completely, and rather crudely, sealed at both ends, but there were six small circular holes in a circle at one end and four similarly slightly larger ones at the other. It was a little over 2 inches long and $1\frac{1}{4}$ inches in diameter. When shaken, some black powder (that later proved to be carbon almost of the consistency of lamp black) came out. Asked what this might

be, Stan in turn asked first where it had come from, and was told the following.

The little girl's grandfather and his eldest son had gone out shortly after sunrise one morning some weeks before to hunt in the woods above the back field. There was a slight mist. Just after they had entered the woods, this object had come sailing down through the leaves above and landed at a slight angle in the soft loam between the two men. The son had picked it up. There was no sound of a plane in the air.

Before Stan could ask any further questions, another of the grown sons went to a kitchen drawer and brought out a whole handful of the cylinders, and then proceeded to explain their origin. They had been landing for weeks, intermittently, in the back field; at all times of the day, and apparently also at night because the children had found some in the morning where they had not been the night before. We were given three of the cylinders, one of which we sent to a government military research center.

This case, which I consider to be properly attested, illustrates still another feature of falls: their repetition at regular, or odd, intervals over a limited area. If the items are transported by tornadoes, or are dropped from airplanes, how to explain this repetition, more especially if neither suggested transporters have ever been spotted or heard in the area? If, on the other hand, there is something in fixed orbit above the earth, unwanted food animals, discarded laboratory junk, spent cylinders, or other materials could continue to land on the same spot for as long as the object remained in a fixed position above. As there wasn't even a Sputnik racing around the earth when these cylinders landed, we can only suppose that they might have come from a UAO.

It is now my considered opinion that the phenomena of 'falls' is definitely connected with UAO's, and in three separate ways. First, the procedure could be linked to a (hypothetical) method of transportation now called ITF, or instant transference, which we shall take up in more detail later. Second, many if not all the items that fall, other than those that can be positively demonstrated to have been

moved by whirlwinds or tornadoes, could be the result of deliberate intelligent activities carried on in UAO's above the earth's surface. Third, and this is in a way the 'farthest out', some falls could actually *be* UAO's, UAP's, or parts of them.

There are many who, I know only too well, reject all such suggestions. Among these are many of the most serious-minded ufologists, and I do not blame them. It is enough to ask that at least some UAO's be accepted as constructions manufactured by intelligent living entities; it is quite another matter to ask the same people, who have come to believe that, to consider the possibility that some could be themselves living entities. What is more, a number of annoying red herrings have been both deliberately and inadvertently dragged across this whole picture.

One of these was initially brought on by the 'terror' – I can call it nothing less – that serious-minded ufologists have of the works of Charles Fort. Here again, one can hardly blame *any* scientifically inclined person for this reaction to the old wizard. Fort was a great collector, but although he had some real scientific training (as a zoologist, incidentally) and some experience as a newsman, he was never a scientist, and he was a sloppy reporter in that he persisted in editorialising. When he stuck to straight reporting, he was almost magnificent, but he let his tongue-in-cheek, pixyish sense of humor run away with him when he came to try to explain the appalling potpourri of facts he unearthed.

Fort was the first person in the modern age to collect reports of both falls and UAO's, as well as of ITF and a number of other related subjects, all of which were absolute anathema to both scientists and the public, and were taken as an affront even to plain common sense at that time. Among other things, he suggested that some UAO's might be some sort of space animals, raining their blood upon earth, and so on. Curiously, we are today being forced into considering just such ridiculous-sounding proposals, though from quite another angle, and with proper scientific considerations.

True scientists have really open minds, even if there are those among them who persist in hewing a line too confined by 'established' beliefs. The ufologists have not been wholly open-minded, for all their protestations that they are. To be truly open-minded you have got to have considerable experience of reality, a lot of training in scientific methodology, an almost all-embracing skepticism – especially of skeptics – and what can only be called a rather profoundly philosophical frame of mind. If you are going to follow the precepts of scientific inquiry, you have to be prepared to at least consider if not accept anything that you stumble across along that path. You just cannot stop short and say, 'That's too much; I don't believe it.' That it is too much for *you* is permissible, and for you to admit it is laudable, but to refuse to consider anything on the grounds that you don't believe it is, from a scientific point of view, inexcusable. The Age of Belief is over, and we are struggling to enter the Age of Reason, wherein facts alone count.

CHAPTER VIII

Our Uninvited Visitors

We have already noted the letter in *Science* which made the bold suggestion that the organised bodies in carbonaceous stony meteorites might be deliberately planned and planted coded messages devised by a higher civilisation as communications with other intelligencies. There are also what may be called astro-statisticians, mostly astronomers of higher rank, who have – slowly and cautiously – approached the subject from a slightly different angle.

These savants started from, and have remained strictly within, the concept of life as we know it, based on hydrocarbons and confined within the physical limits found on our planet. To sum up their argument, they point out that there are billions of stars in our galaxy alone that may be called 'suns' since they fall into the same slot on the graph of stars as does our luminary. They point out further that as far as we have been able to ascertain by spectroscopic analysis, these stars are all of the same constitution, are possibly of the same 'age', and may quite likely be attended by a system of planets such as we live in. Such a system might well be expected to have a planet of about the size of our earth circling its sun at about the distance that the earth is from our sun. Should this be so, the arguments for such a planet being similar if not identical to ours far outweigh any put forward to the effect that they would be so different in chemiphysical constitution as absolutely to preclude the evolvement of life as we know it. From this logical consideration, this group of scientists came to the conclusion that life is not only possible but highly probable elsewhere.

Then came the biologists who pointed out the following. Life as we know it appears to be but an extension of chemical complexity combined with captured forces of an electrical or electromagnetic nature (inherent in matter in any case), encapsulated in an entity. Given a certain range of temperature on a planet with a hydrosphere, that is a water envelope between its central solid core and its gaseous atmosphere, macromolecules would almost automatically start to form by the linkage of carbon atoms. Once started, anything of such a nature must inevitably give rise to variety. Once you have variety, you are on the road to both mutation and heterodoxy, and thus to evolution, which invariably proceeds from the simple to the ever more complex. And, once you have entities evolving, you will also inevitably – if you are dealing with living entities – end up with intelligent ones, given time and no catastrophies. Biologists declared such a maxim long ago, and nothing that has been discovered since has conflicted with or refuted any part of this concept.

It seems therefore that all departments of inquiry have finally come to a meeting of the minds on this subject. However, many still balk at the contributory suggestions of the ufologists. This is unfortunate, because their observations would appear to set some worthwhile guidelines for investigation.

Let us leave aside for now the matter of the possibility of what we earlier called space creatures and concentrate upon the evidence for *intelligent* living entities that may have come from elsewhere. Before doing so, however, there is one other troublesome matter that has to be cleared out of the way – the same old problem of artificial animals and animated machines.

Under the general heading of animated machines, we must place robots of all kinds, including pure robots possibly made in the likeness of humanoids or other animals, but not of the same composition. Some UAO's could quite well be self-contained robots like our primitive space probes, and if they had advanced thinking computers built into them, they would be to all intents and purposes 'intelligent entities'.

Others could be remotely controlled by other living entities, either robotic or natural. An intelligent machine is not, however, the same as an artificial life-form, and in this category must be placed the (imaginary) androids and/or other '-oids', *and* something else.

The biochemical-geneticists say that if they go a bit farther along in their current research in one particular direction, they may be able to create entirely new life-forms, even to the extent of breeding, by test tube, human or humanoid geniuses. Let us suppose that some other intelligent entities elsewhere reached this point some time ago – what might happen? First, they might take over their own evolution, breeding a new and more competent entity and then sterilising themselves and so going into planned and voluntary extinction. The new breed would then doubtless keep working to develop ever more powerful and efficient entities; and there is no known end to such a process. However, they might diversify their efforts at any stage, 'making' all manner of different entities for different purposes. One form might quite well be shaped like a Mexican hat, be composed of silicones (to oversimplify), feed on raw radiation, and employ novel principles to get about. It could in fact be one of the flying saucers, or Wassilko-Serecki's space animals.

Then again, actual living machines could be constructed to behave like these, but to have space within them for transporting other types. Almost all, if not all, living things we know of carry internal parasites that exist mostly in symbiosis with their host; and let us not forget that we ourselves are, in a manner of speaking, parasites inside our mothers for what are probably the nine most important months of our lives. A living machine could be constructed with space within it for other living entities – rooms filled with gases or liquids – and with port-lights constructed like the light-emission organs of some luminous animals, which are made just like eyes but work in reverse. In fact, the possibilities in this field are seemingly endless. Such constructions would probably not be endowed with intelligence above that required simply to get where its constructors want it to go and

take the necessary evasive actions in face of danger, such as even an amoeba will do.

On the other hand, the 'master' entities might, in certain circumstances, prefer to program their beast and send it off on its own to take care of itself. In this case, they might rely on the vehicle itself, rather than any other types that they were shipping in it. The vehicle could be the captain and his cargo a bunch of morons, or other 'lower classes', to be delivered somewhere for a specific purpose. These passengers would be merely occupants. Which brings us, rather neatly, to this subject.

It has become customary among ufologists recently to refer to all animated entities seen in, coming out of, entering, or hanging around UAO's as simply 'occupants'. This would seem to be good common sense. Doubtless many 'believers' would prefer that all UAO's turn out to be sort of super-machines, constructed of something simple like duralumin, neatly welded, with plastic domes and ports, mysterious sliding doors, and so forth, and piloted by those who built them. Would that they could all turn out to be just this but, unfortunately, neither life generally, nor even the construction of planes, rockets, or especially interplanetary or other spaceships could possibly be that simple. Consider for a moment just how many people of how many different specialties are required to get a new-model plane into the air.

First come the creators who conceive the project; then the planners who spend much time just thinking and writing down or sketching their ideas; next the designers, who are incredibly diversified since each feature and aspect of a plane must be handled by a different group of specialists. We then have hosts of others involved – mining, refining and transporting metals, manufacturing glass and plastics and an endless catalog of other products and items. There must also be another host of financiers, bankers, bureaucrats, and the like who spend thousands of hours, even working with computers, on the organisational side. Next come the technologists to test the plans, designs, and even the practicality of the very concept itself; and after these hordes of technicians, ranging from highly specialised engineers to simple grease-monkeys, who start to build first a model for testing, and then a pilot model. And, before you can get the latter airborne, other small armies have to provide airfields, fuel, lubricants, and a list of other items that fills a large book. Finally, a new person turns up – the pilot. Are we to suppose that it is all different with UAO's?

Just imagine what would happen on some other planetary body if one of our space-probes was manned by (1) a middle-aged Bushman woman, (2) a six-foot-six-inch Nigerian from somewhere around Katsena, with his near black skin color and his flowing white robes and turban, (3) a blonde, buxom, Swedish girl, (4) a blue-black-skinned Melanesian with a full mop of branching red hair, (5) a Japanese child, and (6) a Neapolitan man, with shiny, black, wavy hair and an ivory skin. I can imagine the inhabitants of such a planet, if intelligent at all, going into near hysterics and their authorities immediately locking up any who said they had encountered such a coterie coming out of a space vehicle and collecting plants and domestic animals. The situation would become more confounded if only one or two of these six types happened to be seen manning a space-traveling vehicle. And, if only one of the types was seen at a time in various places and by different people, the debate among the witnesses as to which was telling the truth and which imagining things could well lead to bloodshed. This is just about the situation in which we (terrestrial man) are today. So let us try to be a bit more logical.

It is possible that not even one creator of any intraspace vehicle has ever visited this earth. Equally possible, not one single representative of any of the vast hosts of organisers, scientists, technologists, and technicians who created the things has ever done so either. Their occupants that do get here could be pilots, but they could equally well be mere travelers, or crews; and the latter could be composed of naturally different types or artificially bred creatures of all manner of 'races' and 'classes', each designed to perform one or a few specific functions.

Then there is another thing to be borne in mind. If some intelligent entities developed intraspace travel long ago and far away, they must, almost inevitably, have visited an endless parade of planets supporting life, a certain percentage of which would include intelligent life. Surely, they would have either colonised or treatied with the inhabitants of these and, simply on the grounds of statistical probability, have picked up a number of them as allies, cohorts, mere travelers, or helpers, along the line. In the case of conquest, they might have enslaved some, brainwashed them, and carried them along to do special jobs. And here we hit a most significant note.

Remember Laika, the first dog the Russians shot into orbit? Remember also the little squirrel-monkey we sent aloft; and then the unhappy rhesus monkeys, and finally the button-pushing chimpanzees? We have shot species of animate life other than ourselves first into the upper atmosphere, and it is possible that other species will be carried in our first planetary probes because they are expendable and can be tossed out of the capsule to see if our analysis of the atmosphere is correct and sufficiently all-embracing, to make sure that man can survive there.

Such 'lower-types' could also do yeoman service in contacting life-forms on other astronomical bodies and ascertaining whether they are friendly or hostile, whether they can be bred with, what they eat, and so forth.

Similarly, the occupants of manned spaceships might be as different from the intelligent entities who created them as dogs are from men; or, they could be like them, just as chimps are like us. A pragmatic, unemotional civilisation might use creatures much more like themselves, or even their own 'lower classes'.

To sum up: if some UAO's are machines or constructions, they must have been made by some intelligent living entities or life-forms. Some of those we see could then be robotic, others 'manned;' but if manned, their occupants must be either animated machines, artificial 'animals', or natural living entities. Those occupants that have been reported are

rather diverse in form. Does this imply natural variety such as we have on this planet or deliberate diversification by more superior types? It has got to be one or the other, and from what we know of our own history and behavior, it is quite probably the latter – though, as with us, founded on an initial natural diversity.

Yet, despite all the possibilities for diversification, there is one rather astounding fact that stands out in ufology. This is the comparative *lack* of diversity among the occupants of space craft. Let me explain.

If you would consider for a moment the almost incredible diversity of life-forms on this earth, and then contemplate the enormousness of the universe, does it not seem strange to you that absolutely without exception the occupants of UAO's are reported to be at least *humanoid*? With all the bug-eyed monsters and tentacled genies of the science-fiction writers, which have been so widely read about for half a century, would it not seem likely that, if not due to mere imagination alone, somebody, sometime, somewhere, reporting on an occupant he has seen, would have come up with at least one tentacled horror, giant arthropod, or even a clanking robot? That they have not – and this goes for illiterate tribesmen as well as mystical sophisticates – would seem to indicate, in my opinion, that they are telling the truth, to the best of their ability, about what they do see. But why the humanoid form, as opposed to any other?

Two profound thinkers got together some years ago and did some real thinking on this problem, and then published a most cogent article on their conclusions. These gentlemen were Sprague de Camp, a well-known writer of science fiction but also author of books on various aspects of human behavior and belief, and Willy Ley, one of the last of the true universalists, trained as both a paleontologist and an engineer, the first secretary of the first rocket society (in Germany), and author of many books on scientific and technological matters which, like those of De Camp, were aimed at – and really got to – the intelligent nonspecialist.

They started on the assumption that intelligent life exists,

but then departed from ontological and philosophical considerations, and got down to solid engineering. They began with the basic biological maxims and then came to consider the corporeal body of an intelligent entity capable of creating a civilisation, but all the while staying strictly within the chemiphysical limits of life on this planet. Working up from a protogean, they soon arrived at a four-legged animal with sense-organs at the front end and eliminatory mechanism at the back – like, say, a dog. Then Ley took over as a zoologist and pointed out that while no more than four legs are really needed for propulsion, the creature, however intelligent, finds itself in a sort of cul-de-sac because it cannot manipulate. One pair of limbs, and preferably the front ones, has to be 'released' to do this. This necessitates that the creature either sit up or stand up on its back limbs. Opossums, mice, kangaroos, and lots of other animals achieved this, including some animals that we call generally lemurs.

However, once this has been mastered, several other things must take place, both automatically and of necessity. First, the eyes must move around to the front of the head (from the side, as in the lower mammals) so that what is being held in the hands can be seen. Second, the action of so bringing food up to the mouth, instead of putting the head down to eat, made it possible for the animal to watch out for enemies while eating. Next, gravity got to work on the brain of the creature, so that its skull – which contains a computer that is only an electrical switchbox controlling all the rest of the body and its actions – came to sit on top of an upright spinal column instead of hanging out in front of a horizontal one. This called for changes in the supply of blood to the brain and several other purely mechanical adjustments.

Already Ley and De Camp had a creature ready for the next stage. This stage is one of true manipulation – not just holding food and bringing it up to the mouth as a muskrat does. Now, the 'hands' of quite a lot of mammals are fairly efficient, but it was the lemurine branch that happened to have or develop a thing called a thumb which, by becoming opposable to the other fingers, made it possible to do much

more than just hold things. Starting from this, the other fingers became much more flexible and efficient, while the wrist and the whole arm loosened up from its primitive fore-and-aft mechanism to an almost complete rotary function. (Just consider what you can do with your hands and arms – if you try hard enough, you can scratch every part of your body.) Meantime, the back limbs became elongated for leaping and then straightened up to become reciprocal 'running' devices. Meanwhile, all manner of other subtle changes took place in the anatomy and physiology of the creatures, resulting in such things as enhanced oxygenation of the blood and so forth, so that we have an intelligent creature able to get about rapidly, be alert to danger, and manipulate things.

Chimpanzees use sticks for probing just as we do, and they take happily to hammers for bashing on things. I once met a trained chimp that could put its dinner chair together with screws! No wonder anthropoids such as our ancestors, like the Australopithecines, took to cracking bones and horns and using them as spoons and diggers, and later types took to cracking stones. So here we have an intelligent creature starting to manufacture things. You can go on from there, though there is one more essential point.

All of this could just as well have taken place in a liquid medium (i.e., water) as a gaseous one (i.e., air), and there are creatures that have not done too badly in this respect – for example, the octopus that can copulate with one arm, pile stones with another, open clams with two more, and still have some left over to walk about on – and all at the same time. However, even if octopuses had taken to chipping flints and building temples, they would have been, literally, stuck in the mud because you can't engender a naked flame in a liquid – without such gadgets as metal tanks and welding torches. Metallurgy, on which true civilisation is founded, has to be prosecuted in a gaseous medium and preferably with available oxygen. So, once again, primitive 'man' was properly situated.

The real point here is that by this process of purely pragmatic and logical inquiry, Ley and De Camp demonstrated

that the most efficient construction for an intelligent life-form that may produce a technological culture or civilisation is (or almost must be) something like us. True, this is almost arguing backward, but Nature is very logical, and so why go searching about for other ways that things might have evolved when we have an end-product in ourselves for all to see. Does this make it any easier to accept the fact that the occupants of UAO's are reportedly constructed more or less along the same lines as ourselves?

These alleged occupants seem to fall into four basic classes or types. Three of these may be simply classified by size: (1) the pygmies, (2) the standard man-sized, and (3) the giants. The fourth lot is the most irksome of all, because it includes a number of, for the most part, standard-sized entities but which show most startling and unpleasant proclivities – notably evanescence and/or the ability to become invisible – either intrinsically, or by influencing the observer, as in hypnosis. The last will be left until later. Meantime, we should give an example of the other types, and discuss their alleged attributes.

The first are of course the famous 'little green men' and related humanoid-appearing types of small size. These are alleged to stand anywhere from only 2 to 4½ feet. Few of them have ever even been stated to be themselves green, but there are lots of stories and even some pretty solid reports of their wearing green clothing or uniforms. Some of the Class 2, or human-sized, have, on the other hand, been said to have had blue-green skins. Until recently, the pygmies were by far the most often reported type, and stories about them go back through history to the Stone Age, as we shall see later. While humanoid in appearance, they are said to display a number of differences in the details of their bodily construction. Many are said to look just like children, and there are cases on record in which the human observer has at first thought they *were* children and treated them accordingly. I encountered one such case personally, where a solid, stalwart widow carrying on her husband's farm in Pennsylvania stated she had the following experience.

This lady's house stands in the middle of somewhat extensive vegetable gardens about a quarter of a mile back from a blacktop road, and is surrounded by tall, dense old woodlands. The farm land lies on the opposite side of the road. The garden is surrounded by a 4-foot rabbit fence in which the vertical distance between the horizontal wires increases from the bottom up. The fence was in good repair, though it supported a thick growth of climbing vines almost all over two sides of the garden. The front door was in the center of a long wide porch reached by half a dozen steps from the walkway that angled around the house from the west side where the road ended in a large turn-around and parking lot. The nearest house was about three miles down the road to the south. To the north lay a small group of houses and a filling station at a crossroads about a mile distant. There were no children in the big house south, but a few tots in the tiny village. However, it was summer, and there were two children's camps a few miles away. From the south porch a good view of the acre of garden is obtained with clear sight over the vine-covered fence.

The lady was a citizen of substance and employed two farm hands who lived in the little village, the wife of one of whom helped in the house daily, except on Wednesdays. And it was on a bright sunny Wednesday afternoon that the lady happened out on to the south porch and to her considerable annoyance saw four 'children' in the garden near the fence, pulling up onions, lettuce, and other vegetables. When the screen door slammed, they dropped their loads and leaped over the fence and hid behind it. The lady shouted at them and then, rather characteristically for such a stalwart, went back into the house to fetch a broom. By the time she got back again there were six children in the garden hurriedly gathering up the dropped bunches of vegetables. Now really annoyed, the lady started down the steps but then she held back because, as she put it, 'The brats were all dressed in funny gray uniforms, but had those silly Buck Rogers space helmets on their heads, and toy pistols hanging from big belts.' Somewhat nonplussed, she hesitated

while the 'children' gathered armfuls of vegetables and flowers by tearing them up by the roots and then, one at a time, took off over the fence in graceful leaps and disappeared into the woods. A few moments later a strange humming noise filled the air, rising to a crescendo that the lady described as 'most annoying'.

We would never have heard of this story had her household helper not had a shattering experience the next morning, which was in part witnessed by the lady of the house. This other woman had gone out early to collect eggs from a long line of chicken brood-boxes which stuck out of the west side of a big barn. There was a ground mist that almost concealed the top of the barn. The young woman no sooner started opening the lids of the hutches than a high-pitched whining noise approached in the mist above. As she rapidly progressed along the line, this noise got louder and louder and moved directly overhead. Apparently the lady of the house heard it then and ran out, and just in time for both of them to see what they described as a 'saucer' about 20 feet in diameter come down through the mist. This had a low domed roof but in front there was an open cockpit, in which two of the 'children' with their bubble-helmets were sitting, like pilots in a plane. Just as the two women were ready to dart into the barn, these two little people waved cheerily at them. Then the noise rose in pitch, and the apparition whooshed up into the mist again. There was a rider to this 'report' in that the lady kept complaining of the fact that the girl had dropped the egg basket!

We investigated this incident in 1954 when 'little green men' were not popular, to say the least, with anybody, and notably the ufologists. It was also before Coral E. Lorenzen published the first edition of her book *The Great Flying Saucer Hoax*. This book was not the first serious coverage of UAO's and occupants, but it stands alone in the field as the most sensible, pragmatic, and balanced exposition of this matter. While Mrs Lorenzen (co-organiser with her husband of Aerial Phenomena Research Organisation) maintains a strictly scientific approach to the facts, she does not have the

advantage – purely prestigious as it may be – of the academic titles of the only other writer who has deigned to put on record both stories and reports of UAO's, and reports on pygmy occupants. This is Aimé Michel, a French engineer who has also written books about flying saucers. In order to give you the facts, I will have to lean almost entirely on these two searchers, and I would like to make this quite clear before proceeding to do so. Information obtained from other sources will be so acknowledged, but all else that follows here about landings and occupants is the outcome of researches by these two, and most notably by Mrs Lorenzen, who has specialised in Latin American incidents which are to date by far the best documented.

But, before plunging deeper into the welter of reports that pertain primarily to occupants of UAO's – or visitors suspected of being connected with UAO's – we must endeavor to clarify a certain aspect of biology. This is an aspect of animal evolution – and plant evolution, for that matter – that is called 'parallel evolution'. This means that one or more groups of animals widely separated on the general tree of life come to look alike or even almost identical. This may be due to two causes: first, mimicry by one form or another for protective purposes, like some flies that take on the appearance of a certain wasp that has a sting and is therefore avoided by predators. Or, second, parallel evolution may come about simply because there is a similar natural environmental niche available in more than one place.

The classic example of the latter is the mammalian fauna of Australia, which has proliferated into all manner of types – from tiny creatures that look exactly like mice to (once not so long ago) gigantic bumbling beasts looking for all the world like hornless rhinoceroses. Nonetheless, the Australian marsupials still do have unless we are mistaken – a common ancestor with all the other non-marsupial mammals.

Now scientists contend that, even if there is parallel evolution on sundry similar planets scattered around our galaxy, the chance that the first ones with sufficient intelligence to establish a technological civilisation would come out the

same in any two places is so remote as to be statistically and virtually inconceivable. The ufologists just as vehemently contend that this is, or at least could be, the explanation of the apparent close similarity between ourselves and reported occupants. Their theory follows Ley and De Camp, and is actually just as properly scientific in that they contend such parallel creation need not be phylogenetically based, but purely mechanical. However, still other ideas have been advanced.

Some suggest that there *is* phylogenetic relationship, in that we humans were either planted on this planet, ready-made as it were, or that our most distant ancestors, in the form of 'organised bodies' like macromolecules with built-in patterns, either drifted in here in meteorites, or were deliberately fired at the earth, or were deposited by UAO's long ago. There is an obverse notion to this which is rather popular with the mystical and pseudoscientific fraternities to the effect that the human type developed on *this* planet long ago and then discovered space travel and colonised other suitable astral bodies. Most of these people seem to lean to the notion that there were once mighty human civilisations on our earth which deliberately left it in order to avoid violent, worldwide geophysical upheavals and their attendant catastrophies, which these immensely wise and knowledgeable people were able to predict.

Let us apply a little basic logic to all this. Since we have not, at least as far as is popularly known, yet captured an occupant, the whole matter is a mere intellectual exercise. Nonetheless, let us assume, for now at least, that there are such beings, and that, while are are roughly humanoid in form, they vary somewhat in the details of their external form. How could this be, and how could it come about?

Some process akin to parallel evolution would manifestly seem to have occurred. This would most likely have proceeded on the Ley-De Camp principles, but the very basic prototypes – i.e., carbon chains – might still have had a common origin. If they did not, which would mean that they

came about or evolved separately on a number of water planets, they would still, in a manner of speaking, have a common origin in the element carbon itself; and this takes us back to the cosmic question as to whether *all* matter has a common origin.

If you can get a small marsupial mammal that *looks* like a mouse, and another one that *is* what we call a mouse (of the rodential order of mammals), at the same time, in a few million generations starting from a common ancestor, why balk at getting humans on this planet and humanoids on another in a few billion generations, starting with the same hydrocarbon macromolecule? It is but a matter of degree, of the time scale you view it upon, and your understanding of the evolutionary process.

Looked at this way, both the scientific evolutionists and the serious ufologists are correct, and not actually in conflict. It is simply that the former are taking too restricted a view of the matter in denying the possibility – which is absolutely valid – that man (*per se*) could not evolve separately twice or more times, while the ufologists are not taking a wide enough view of the matter and persist in talking about 'little green *men*', 'space *people*', and 'hairy *giants*' (with the implication that the last are giant *humans*). In fact, it is mostly a matter of semantics.

If the scientists should say that, while the statistical chances of man's evolving twice or more times quite separately is beyond the pale, but that the humanoid type could possibly so come about many times, one deck would be cleared. If then, the ufologists would couch their reports of occupants in more precise terms, such as 'pygmy-sized humanoid-shaped life-forms', 'intelligent entities of human size and form, apparently coming from space', and '7-foot, hair-covered creatures of human form', number two deck would be cleared.

As we shall see, there is now at least some 'evidence' – and it seems to be of a properly scientific nature – that there was, at least once, a superior civilisation on this earth. Some pseudoscientists and mystics have pounced on this, asserting

that it 'proves' what they have been saying all along about such things as Atlantis, Mu, Lemuria, *et al.* Only a small minority among them – and these almost to a man with some real training in scientific methodology – have suggested the corollary: that such civilisations need not have been indigenous to this planet but rather were imported by uninvited visitors. As I shall point out later when we come to investigate the archaeological aspects of ufology, every bit of 'evidence' for such earlier civilisations points to this view rather than to the idea of a succession of indigenous cultural and technological advances on this earth, each wiped out in succession by cataclysm, and all contrived by what we call human beings.

Among the scientifically trained who have passed over into the pseudoscience camp was the late Maurice K. Jessup. Maurice Jessup was trained as an astronomer, specialising in selenology and meteoritics. He became interested in ufology and later devoted almost all his energies to investigating its early history. Ultimately, he became convinced of the validity of certain theories of his own and of others as to the nature of both UAO's and more especially of their creators, pilots, and other occupants.

To boil these ideas down to a minimum for the sake of easy understanding: It may be said that he came to believe that this planet had been visited throughout its geological history by intelligent beings from elsewhere. He believed that the last lot of these, around 40,000 to 20,000 B.C., were of pygmy stature and did much excavating and building in stone. He also believed that both they and other types live in fairly large artificial worlds that move or drift about in space, and that some of them have dwelled for millennia in inner space – notably at nodal points between earth, the moon, and our sun, where gravitic pull is virtually neutralised.

By Jessup's concept, this earth could have been under perpetual surveillance since its beginning. It could be 'invaded' from time to time. All manner of intelligencies, humanoid in form, could have come here and gone away

again. Our (human) evolution could have been interfered with, and our cultural advance regulated one way or another. Most, if not all, types of UAO's could be explained. We could have been 'seeded' or we could have been 'planted' here, and we could be wholly or partially controlled. Furthermore, geophysical catastrophies could have been predicted and action taken in advance by these superior intelligencies. In fact, Charles Fort's wildest of all suggestions – that we are but 'cattle' owned by superior intelligencies – could be validated. Jessup delved into history and prehistory, archaeology and anthropology (of which he unfortunately knew practically nothing), and myth, legend and folklore. Having some scientific training, he avoided most of the pitfalls in his own fields, but he sank into the deepest sloughs of absurdity in others. Nonetheless, he did assemble – *and document* – the most unnerving data. It is to be hoped that Dr Condon's team will plow through it all.

There is nothing in even Jessup's theories that is in conflict with either the scientific evolutionists or the serious ufologists. His space entities could quite well have a far distant common ancestry with both of us and endless other intelligent life-forms. They could well be humanoid in appearance, even if only remotely related. Their existence could also account for any grains of fact there may be in the beliefs of the mystics, mythologists, pseudoscientists, and even the contactees. In fact, we most certainly must include the possibility of real and true space persons in our overall speculation. UAO's that come barging in here from goodness knows where, either by jet propulsion, reaction drive, or ITF, are no 'further out' than similar items just dropping in from time to time from hollow artificial 'worlds' that have been and still are drifting around in space. Perhaps, as Jessup also suggested, such intelligent beings might have for millennia used some of the other planets in our solar system, and also the moon, as way stations.

The investigation of the moon in our planned space program is showing some strange signs. There already has been quite a bit published by astronomers about red glows,

moving lights, and sudden appearances and disappearances of physical features on our junior partner planet. The idea that the moon was covered with a 200-foot-deep layer of dust has now been proved to be just as silly as the old suggestion that it was made of green cheese. However, the possibility remains that evidence of activity on the moon by intelligent visiting entities may be found. The now proven presence of rocks, stones, and gravel on the moon shows that it is not what we once thought it was, for these items indicate erosion of some sort. Even if the moon is found to be as dead as it presently looks, there is now good reason to suppose that it has not always been so. What is more, and again as Jessup once suggested, life need not live on the *surface* of a gross body. It could live *under* the surface, like our burrowing animals and like most of the living matter on our planet from viruses to groundhogs.

Here, we are, in a way, jumping the gun on ourselves by considering the place of origin of our visitors, which will be discussed in a later chapter. But we must consider the matter briefly now if we are to preserve a sane and balanced view of the reports of occupants. Just as the origins and constitutions of UAO's may be not only multiple but infinite, so also may be that of their occupants. Many possibilities for their origin must be considered in assessing their probability, and while the pygmy, man-sized, and even the giant types might logically be conceived of as coming from artificial worlds just as well as from natural astronomical bodies, we have to prime ourselves for that fourth much more illogical category – that is, the invisibles. But first, what of these three alleged solid types?

Comparatively few people have claimed that they were both close enough and calm enough when they encountered the pygmy types to make any detailed observations, but those who have reported more than generalities have certainly given us some things to think about. All seem to have been clothed; and almost always, when more than one are alleged to have been seen together, all seemed to have been wearing the same uniform. These range from apparently

skin-tight coveralls, with or without gloves but usually with transparent blister-helmets, to loose tunics; and they vary in color from shiny aluminum to white, gray, black, or green. Brass buttons have more than once been reported, as well as a variety of belts, bandoliers, and what would seem to be side arms.

However, it is in their physical form that we are most interested. Here, we find a strong indication of the head being disproportionately large; the eyes large; and the mouth slit-like; the ears range all the way from 'not apparent' to fantastic structures like those of some bats that can be folded at will. In only one case that I know of have the hands been said to differ markedly from ours. In this case, they were said to have had only four digits; the first to be less opposed than our thumb; and all to have been armed with long claws. The feet are often said to be 'like stumps' but are seldom seen, as the little creatures have usually been observed standing in grass or other ground cover. Nonetheless, while most observers seem to agree that they were wearing some form of foot gear, there are cases wherein cloven, hooflike tracks have been reported.

Three little creatures are said to have been seen in the headlights of a car beside a road at a place called Branch Hill near Cincinnati in March, 1955. A sketch of these made by Leonard Stringfield under the direction of one of the witnesses, by the name of Robert Hunnicutt, at first looked quite idiotic because the creatures are lopsided, the right side of the torso being enormously enlarged and bulbous.

For over a decade I simply put this report aside (an act of unadulterated scientific sin) until I met Dr Carl H. Delacato and some of his associates from the Institutes for the Achievement of Human Potential, a multimillion-dollar medical and educational organisation with headquarters in Philadelphia. These gentlemen visited me to discuss some research they were about to undertake in Africa connected with their worldwide studies of human child behavior. Dr Delacato's main studies are neurological but with a view to the diagnosis and treatment of speech and reading problems.

After our specific work was concluded, we fell into general discussion of aspects of our mutual fields of interest, such as comparative anatomy on the one hand and ethology on the other. In due course, the matter of bilateral symmetry cropped up, and when Dr Delacato discussed his observations on lopsidedness as a strong factor in human mental ability, a thought flashed through my head. I went to find Len Stringfield's sketch. Covering up the caption and all other text that might give a clue as to what it purported to be, I asked the assembled company how they would assess the capabilities of any such creatures as shown. I was not prepared for either the general excitement the sketch caused or, much less so, for their assessment. According to these scientists, a creature so constructed could have an almost excessively high potential mentally.

I had intended putting the sketch away without elaborating on its origin, but the doctors requested the full information. They thought it might be a sketch I had made or had acquired on my worldwide travels as a collector, and that such deformities might exist in numbers in some out-of-the-way place. I expected some rather peeved comment when I disclosed the origin of the sketch, but again to my great surprise all present enthused mightily and they said frankly that this could prove to be one of our strongest arguments for the acceptance of the reality of extraterrestrial visitors.

Later, I received a letter from Dr Delacato elaborating on our discussion. Here are excerpts from that letter:

'Your question about biological lopsidedness is most intriguing. I am delighted to conjecture with you, and pure conjecture it is, about the lopsidedness described in the reports of "little men" . . . .

'In our work with reading, speech and learning problems here at the Institutes for the Achievement of Human Potential, we have found that children who are *not* one-sided (either completely right-sided or completely left-sided) are much more prone to have speech, reading and learning problems than are children who have established complete one-sidedness. . . .

'Modern civilised man is the only creature that has developed complete one-sidedness; all other animal forms tend to be bilateral or ambidextrous. Significantly, modern man is the only creature who has a symbolic spoken and written language. . . .

'If animals have no sidedness, if pre-literate primitives have poor sidedness, and if successful modern, civilised man has complete sidedness, what would happen if we carried sidedness to the extreme?

'What would happen if we were not only sided, but if we didn't use the other side, allowing it to be atrophy? One could conjecture that this creature might have some communication and learning abilities which modern civilised man has not yet developed. . . .

'If one views sidedness as an evolving adaptive mechanism, one might envision super-sidedness as synonymous with super-human. . . . '

Details of other physical features of a biological nature, purely morphological or anatomical, among the pygmies is sorely lacking. It, for the most part, concerns skin color, which has been said to range from 'very dark', whatever that may mean, to very white, and bluish, or bluish-green. It has been suggested that green would indicate the presence of chlorophyll as in plants, but this need not be so if the color is a blue-green. Certain tree-frogs in Africa have blue-green bones; several groups of animals have blue-green blood wherein the iron is replaced by copper; and a rather bright, blue-green boy with dark blue hair was reported from Yugoslavia around 1950. Searching the records, I was struck by the total absence of any reference to pink, red, or even coppery or reddish-browns, but the significance of this has eluded me despite having questioned innumerable biochemists and physiologists.

It is the eyes of the occupants that seem most to impress those who say they have encountered these entities – and this goes for the man-sized and giants as well. If the eyes are seen

at all – and in many cases they seem to have been hidden by hoods, helmets, or visors – they seem invariably to be described as 'very big', 'staring', 'kind of slant-eyed', 'almond-shaped', 'apparently lidless', and almost always as being 'very pale' and usually yellow. There are records of 'depthless' black eyes, and of pale gray or even bright blue. And time and time again, the storytellers remark upon 'glowing eyes'.

The Braxton 'monster' described earlier appeared to have been emitting pale-blue beams of light (emitted energy), and there are now numerous assertions that the so-called 'Mothmen' that infested West Virginia in late 1966 and early 1967 similarly emitted reddish 'beams' from their top parts. There is no doubt about the fact that, be all these stories true or false, the raconteurs seem to be most concerned with the eyes of our alleged visitors. Even Mr and Mrs Barney Hill remarked upon the curious construction of the eyes of the crew of the UAO that they said they were taken into. A young Brazilian who stated that he was forced into sexual intercourse with a seeming space female commented at length about her strange eyes that seemed to go part-way around the sides of her head. The eye has for our species throughout the ages been looked upon as the entry to the soul. Although scent is probably still our most potent sense, it is indeed through vision that we judge others and the world about us generally. (One wonders if our alleged visitors see us as we do them, or if, frankly, they see us at all! This is another matter that we shall take up in more detail later.)

What we have called the pygmies appear to blend into the standard, man-sized class of visitors. There are reports, as well as many mere stories, of humanoid types of all statures from four to over six feet. Yet the attributes and behavior of the man-sized seem to be hardly different from those of the little people. Both have now been alleged to display various skin colors, to be variously clothed or uniformed. Repeatedly, both have been reported collecting plant specimens, notably of our crop plants. Both have been alleged to be particularly interested in our domestic animals; and

both have allegedly made aggressive moves against humans with an apparent view to capturing them. What are we to make of such allegations?

It seems almost painfully obvious that all these space people, either acting in consort or along parallel lines of endeavor, are surveying and studying our planet and its life-forms. However, speaking as a scientist rather than a reporter on this occasion, there is one aspect of their alleged activities and behavior that impresses me. Having spent the first half of my life doing just exactly what these creatures are said to be doing – collecting specimens for scientific study – I try to put myself in their position and, rightly or wrongly, draw comparisons. After obtaining several degrees in the biological sciences, and having taught zoology at Cambridge University, I went into field work on behalf of the British Museum and other such institutions, and mounted nine expeditions to collect specimens.

It took me only one collecting trip to discover a most startling fact. This was that, while our museums are stuffed with an almost endless mass of rare and wonderful specimens, they are all sorely deficient in collections of *common animals.* To start with, there are really only three or four comprehensive books on domestic animals; the best is in Spanish and, having been written and printed in Colombia, has never yet been translated into any other language. Time and time again, in twenty years of collecting, I found that what are called 'series' (large collections of one species, of all ages, and taken around a full year, from any one spot) of the commonest animals in 'other' countries, and even on the homefront, were just not preserved. For instance, at the onset of the big rainy season in Nigeria the night is rendered almost deafening by the mating calls of a certain toad, a toad so common you hear it even in Lagos, the capital. Fascinated by this, we recorded these calls, which changed over the weeks, while we collected large numbers of the toads of all ages and noted that they changed not only their habitat but their color and even some anatomical features, in a cyclical progression around the seasons. But when we got

back to London, we found there was not one single specimen of that commonest of toads from that area in the enormous collections of the British Museum.

At first, we might consider the alleged behavior of our visitors as almost puerile. How could creatures that have mastered intraspace flight be seemingly so utterly naïve as to risk detection and even gunfire to collect common plants, dogs, and roadside stones? More mature consideration, however, should convince at least biologists with some field experience that these creatures are behaving in a most pragmatic and practical manner.

But our visitors seem also, as we have already remarked, to be inordinately interested in but abysmally uninformed upon our reproductive mechanism, to the point that they seem to have special labs for its investigation, and perform operations such as the Barney Hills described, which would seem to infer the obtaining of ovarian and seminal samples without unduly embarrassing or hurting the 'specimens' (of humans) they have corralled. I found myself forced to undertake a similar investigation when collecting the toads. It was of much interest to know just how those toads did breed, because they form the greatest and best natural control of mosquitoes in the area.

But while these actions on the part of our so-very-advanced-technically visitors are not only perfectly logical but in many ways indicate great insight and competence, they at the same time indicate a considerable primitiveness. In fact, it would seem that this lot of visitors, at least, is, in the biological field, only a little ahead of us. And this is what puzzles me. If they are so competent technically, why do they have to resort to such primitive methods of collecting? Surely they would have by now developed all manner of scoops for physical objects and probes for mental ones. Further, they ought to have developed means of probing and testing the chemiphysical composition of animals, vegetables, and minerals at some distance; and to have been able to figure out our terrestrial genetics.

I have only one answer to this conundrum to offer you.

This is simply – and once again – that this lot is only one of many (or an infinity of) different intelligences that have visited this planet. As we shall see, there is now pretty definite evidence that some much more competent types were here over twenty thousand years ago; that there were others throughout the ages since then; but that it was our first release of atomic energy that seems to have brought this new lot skittering down here.

These seem not to have been quite ready to do a proper job. Their first probes were in some ways inefficient and randomly scattered. They would seem to have tried out all sorts of machines from the famous Swedish 'flying boxcars' to sealed 'flying saucers', giant 'mother ships', 'thought-disks', 'self-propulsive eggs', 'flying chamber-pots', and what have you. In fact, they seem to have stumbled and bumbled around just as we are doing with our so-called space program, with blowups, crash-landings, vaporisations, and all the rest.

What is more, they seem to have resorted to what I call 'Laikas' in the form of these 'hairy giants' which look exactly like some of our own hairy primitives, don't wear clothes, leave naked humanoid foot-tracks, and behave generally just like trained chimpanzees. But, standing behind this lot – or standing complacently on the sidelines – there would seem to be at least one other bunch who are of much greater competence and who, as old Charlie Fort surmised, might consider both our and these visitors' activities somewhat like the activities of children, and who, again as Fort suggested, considered that they own the whole works.

CHAPTER IX

And More Uninvited Visitors!

Carl Sagan suggested that this planet has been visited from time to time, throughout its geological history, by intelligent beings. There is now concrete evidence that this has occurred. The evidence will be discussed later, but first we should pursue this troublesome matter of intelligent life a bit further. Let us assume, for now, that 'intelligence' means the degree of understanding of its environment that a life-form possesses at the stage of development of mankind on this planet today. This is, of course, entirely empirical, and implies that the great apes are not intelligent while we are. By this rating, it would at first seem logical to suppose that any extraterrestrial that gets here – in a spaceship or anything else – is of at least slightly superior intelligence. However, this does not mean that all the occupants need be so. As we have pointed out, there could be 'Laikas' among them, of the average intelligence of an ape or a dog or even lower estate. Some could be of 'lower classes' and not even know how they got here. Then, also, even the technicians running the ships need not, individually, know how they are made or how they function. And even the captain or pilot (or whatever the head chap might be called) need know nothing more than how to read his star maps or how to press the right button to get where he has been told to go. But here comes another enigma.

Suppose the ships are remotely controlled and their occupants are nothing more than a lot of expendable drones or morons, shipped out to do work. Suppose, further, that they might, in some cases at least, be robots or artificial life-

forms. Then they would not have to have any intelligence at all. They could be complete automatons, computerised to perform certain functions, and to 'get lost' if they fail – by vaporisation, flashing-out, 'dropping dead', or elsewise. Just because a mobile, functional entity looking like a life-form comes to this planet from elsewhere does not mean that it is of superior intelligence, or even intelligent at all – even by the arbitrary standard we set up above. But, have any of the real superintelligences, or what I call the creators, ever themselves visited us? These would be the creatures who conceived the plans for intraspace ships and the uses for which they may be employed. If they have, is there any suggestion as to what they look like, and how they behave?

All kinds of suggestions have been put forward in this field, and it is very difficult to sort these out and classify them in any sensible order. It is still more difficult to analyse them and assess their possibilities, but this must be done if we are to preserve any semblance of order, logic, and methodology. Doubtless, the whole endeavor will be considered worthless by the average person, and an impertinence by scientists, but we are faced with a reality – the UAO's – and it is useless just trying to brush them under the carpet any longer.

Serious, sensible, and careful investigations along the lines laid down and insisted upon by so-called scientific methodology – which really means only practical common sense – has brought us to accept the fact that man has evolved on the planet from some primate stock from which the lemuroids, monkeys, and apes also arose. This, of course, implies that we are indigenous to this planet, and are but one end-product of evolution upon it. Nothing in the geological record as we have so far pieced it together suggests any reason for doubting this procedure, or for believing that it has at any time been tampered with by outside forces or from outside sources. Nevertheless, there have for centuries been those who have claimed otherwise. These claims may be organised basically as follows:

(1) This planet was 'seeded':
   (a) In the first place – by 'ova' of some form or another.
   (b) At various later dates – by more advanced types.
   (c) Latterly – by humanoids, hominids, or actually by human beings.
(2) Our Earth has been interfered with:
   (a) By superior intelligencies, throughout its history.
   (b) From time to time, throughout geological history.
   (c) By some form of intelligence, comparatively recently.
(3) We are 'owned' by:
   (a) Intelligent entities who reside elsewhere.
   (b) Creatures who visit us from time to time.
   (c) Supervisors, acting on behalf of either of the above, or others who reside here all the time.

However you look at it, or however you interpret it, it all comes back to the same pragmatic question – *Have* we been so visited, *are* we controlled, and is there any practical evidence of either contention? If the answer is in the affirmative, it can mean only the following.

First, it would imply that true intelligences (or intelligent entities) have existed since time immemorial and that they could have deliberately 'seeded' this planet in the first place. (Of course, they might have 'contaminated' it by visiting it in spaceships that had not been properly sterilised.) This, in turn, would mean that such intelligent entities could have been here *before* any life appeared on this planet – and thus, also at any time later, up to the present time – and would imply their existence for any length of time before the organisation of the first DNA molecule on this planet.

Now, if the visitors are humanoid it would also imply men here before *man* evolved, and/or sort of superman here *after* he had done so. But these theorists do not stop there. They go on to suggest actual, physical interbreeding between such outsiders and the progeny of our own, homegrown evolution – at the hominid if not the humanoid level. Still others suggest that man (*Homo sapiens*) is not indigenous to this planet at all, but is a latter-day import. Then, there are also those, as we mentioned earlier, who suggest that humans reached our present stage of intelligence and technological culture *on this earth long ago*, and maybe more than once; but that they left the earth, in part or as a whole, to colonise other bodies, because of either prior knowledge of impending world catastrophe or as a result of such.

We must also take into consideration the reports in newspapers from all over the world in the past few years of the space people of the contactees, *and* the invisibles. All of this at first sight would seem to be most unscientific. Nonetheless, if we permit speculation about the UFO's and UAO's themselves, we cannot deny it about their occupants. The sheer volume of stories about the latter has now forced us to regard some of them as reports, and, if some of them are to be so regarded, the whole lot had better be taken into account. Thus, we enter a most dubious world of not only myth, legend, and folklore, but also of what is usually called the occult.

Let us first consider the matter of chronology, or time. If there are intelligent beings elsewhere in the universe, how long have they been there in an intelligent form?

Today we have come to accept a new concept of time, and none of us balk at the idea that the light from some distant galaxies has taken billions of years to reach us. The corollary to this is that these galaxies *could* have blown up, otherwise changed, or perhaps even have vanished any time since the light from them that we now see left them. Thus we are actually 'seeing' the past insofar as we are recording energy, in the form of photons, here that emanated very long ago elsewhere. If any entities, corporeal or otherwise, started out in this direction at the speed of light, they might only now be arriving here and so actually be 'living fossils'. Then again, even if time exists at all, there is probably no present – it being only an instant turn-over point between the past and the future. Also, the past and the future may coexist at all times.

As we said much earlier, there are life-forms that go through generations in one of our minutes. Similarly, there could be entities that normally require a thousand, a million, a billion, or more of our 'years' to do so. A few million years' travel at the speed of light *could* be, to such creatures, no more onerous than a two-hour drive in a car is to us. This is but another way the distance problem could be overcome. Let it be understood that it is not only the mystics and science-fiction writers who have made these suggestions. Scientists and even technologists have come up with the same and other equally startling ideas. And nothing that they say refutes the possibilities of extraterrestrials having been or still being on this earth.

The form that such entities could take may be divided into two distinct categories: (1) material, and (2) non-material. Under the first head come the humanoids, be they (to us) of pygmy, normal, or giant size; and the humanoid androids and/or robots. Under the second head come entities that are either permanently invisible in our visual band of the electromagnetic spectrum, or which can 'flash on and off'. Then, there is still a third category to consider.

During the past twenty years there has been a considerable number of stories published and spouted on the air about what have come to be called by *aficionados*, and not altogether jokingly, the 'Men in Black'. Most but not all of this has come from the wilder fringes of crackpotism – the mystics and the contactees. In various other guises, according to the day and age and place of origin, the same sort of thing has been reported throughout the ages by such people. But recently newsmen, even some who are highly skeptical of the whole ufological field, have started to publish similar accounts. However, these, while in substance like the old historical tales, have introduced an entirely new angle to the matter.

This is simply that, whether extraterrestrials exist or not, there seem to be another lot in addition to, and quite distinct from, the occupants of UAO's. Throughout history there have been legends about 'people' who appear from time to

time and who are in some indefinable way different and superior. For the most part, these people may properly be assessed as just that – individuals of superior intelligence – from the memory of whom arose the hero myths of the distant past, the lasting names in folklore, and the great religious leaders of history. At the same time, there is also an absolutely endless record and an overwhelming tradition of just plain odd characters whose origin is not definable and whose subsequent disappearances is never explained. In olden days, before the tight organisation of police forces, the wide use of the numbering system, passports, computerised taxation, iron curtains, and all the regimentation of our modern life, 'foreigners' and various oddballs could and constantly did turn up all over the place. Many of these were charlatans and so came to the attention of whatever authorities there were, but many others just pursued their ways unmolested, often hardly noticed. But still, none of these are the types of which I speak.

Those that are now up for discussion may also have been around since ever, and they could have been mistaken for any of the others mentioned above, or they could have been completely overlooked, being apparently just plain people. However, when UAO's appeared on the scene in 1947, these previously obscure types suddenly sprang into prominence. Perfectly sane and highly respected citizens, often in groups together, started reporting that they had been visited by somber men who both looked odd and behaved in strange ways. In due course news reporters began questioning these citizens, and then a lot of puzzling things began to come to light. In almost every case, these same people had also reported having observed a UFO or some other unexplained aerial phenomenon. Most of them had (a) reported occupants, (b) so stated *on the air* (as opposed to making mere statements to local newspapers) and, most surprising of all, (c) reported having seen such things near our military and other secured locations. This put an entirely new complexion on the whole business.

The new type of 'visitor' – almost invariably dressed in

black – was alleged to spend the entire interview asking penetrating questions, refusing to answer any himself, giving out not one iota of information. These MIB (Men in Black) posed in all manner of guises, all the way from FBI or CIA agents and military personnel to insurance brokers or electric power or phone inspectors. Since impersonating an officer is a grave offense, local police forces, state police, and newsmen naturally sought both information and guidance from the appropriate authorities. Not only did all such proper authorities emphatically deny having prompted any such cloak-and-dagger interviews but, I am told, expressed themselves as being seriously concerned about these reports.

I recently received a firsthand report from an old friend – John A. Keel – who until last year was as skeptical a newshound as I have known. In substance, this was a detailed account of a prolonged investigation of a UFO sighting witnessed by two families. Both families are solid, and both were previously skeptical of UFO's. In due course, a most extraordinary person, almost seven feet tall, with a small head, dead white skin, enormous frame but pipe-stem limbs, turned up after dark on a cold blustery night on the doorstep of one of these families. He announced that he was an insurance agent searching for a certain gentleman who had the same name as the head of that house, because that man might have inherited a great deal of money. This weird individual just appeared out of the night wearing a strange fur hat with a visor and only a light jacket. He flashed an official-looking card on entry, but put it away immediately. Later, when he removed his jacket, he disclosed an official-looking golden shield on his shirt which he instantly covered with his hand and removed.

He requested exactly forty minutes in which to ask some questions. This was granted, and he proceeded to use up exactly thirty of these minutes with some penetrating questions about scars on the father's chest, and other details that were not known even to some of the rest of the family. He then got up to leave but spent ten minutes giving the astonished people a long and rambling conundrum. He

asked the people to try and solve his riddle. Then he left. However, the eldest daughter had become greatly intrigued by this individual during his 'interrogation' because his tight pants had ridden up his skinny legs and she had seen a green wire issuing from his sock and going up his pant's leg, *into* his flesh at two points which were bridged over with about an inch of dark scar tissue. As a result, she ducked out of the back of the house and observed this person's exit. There were no yard lights and it was a dark night, but the girl was able to see a large black car, without lights, come out of an old dirt-road from a neighboring wood, with at least two men in it. The 'visitor' jumped into this car and it drove off, still without lights.

The next day, the head of the family, a prominent local businessman and still a profound skeptic, was called to the phone and a female voice told him flatly and rather curtly that they had found the man (of the same name) they were looking for in California, and then hung up. Not once during the 'interrogation' were UFO's mentioned nor the family's experiences with them. However, the other family who had witnessed the UFO was also contacted by phone in a long series of most strange and in some ways ridiculous manner.

Could the MIB be extraterrestrials, the descendants of extraterrestrials, or agents of extraterrestrials? Or do we also have such an operative outfit of our own – could we *both* have such an outfit? In any case, who are these MIB who show this particular interest in UFO's and UAO's, and especially in people who have said for the record that they have seen occupants or flights near our military installations?

All manner of suggestions have been put forward in answer to these questions but none are either satisfactory or comprehensive enough. If there are now, or have been from time to time in the past, or have always been extraterrestrials among us, we will have to accommodate to a new category of intelligent beings on earth – which I would call the 'permanents'. Other possibilities are that the Men in Black could be crackpots, ufologists, or people sent by officialdom. The first are for the most part neither monied nor organised,

and the second are wholly above-board. The government and military have categorically denied any such hanky-panky. And one can hardly believe that they *would* go around impersonating their own personnel in uniform. No intelligence outfit could be that naïve. If, say, the U.S. Air Force wants to investigate a glut of UAO landings, they can either just move in, fence the area off, and ask everybody to shut up on the grounds of national security, or, like the Navy, they can conduct a quiet investigation without fanfare. Running around, flashing phony badges, and giving false names smacks much more of the amateur.

If there are creatures of super-intelligence who come here, supervise us, control us, or think they own us, surely they would be better equipped, technically and psychologically, to conduct any investigations they desire. Further, if they are that good, why would they want to investigate anything – they ought to be able to monitor it all. Yet, *should* they wish to do so, just such James-Bondish childishness might be the easiest approach in the present state of our so-called civilisation. Those people who have actually 'robbed the bank at Monte Carlo' have always just walked in and picked up the cash. The best and most successful thieves invariably perform just as simply – without guns, without causing a rumpus, using getaway cars, or any of the rest of the B-Class movie folderol.

And what about the 'beings' reported by the contactees? Of course the contactees never have been able to produce a single concrete item of proof, confirmation, or even evidence of what they say they have experienced. Not a single book, tape-recording, photograph, or artifact emanating from off this earth has ever been presented by any of them – except a number of pebbles alleged by one to be 'moon potatoes'. Nevertheless, just as we must separate the true believers of some of the great religions from the fanatics, so also must we separate the contactees into at least two classes. On the one hand, there are those with unsubstantiated tales of constant communication with benign visitors from space; on the other hand, there are those who have never claimed

more than that they once met and communed with extra-terrestrials and, in some cases, took a flight in one of their spaceships at their invitation. I am not talking here of phonies – alleged, suspected, or proven – but of two groups of perfectly sincere people who, I personally have come to believe, are basically just as honest as my serious-minded ufologist or even scientist. Like everybody else, moreover, they are mystified by the whole business. A few of the latter of these two groups of contactees have made only one claim, never deviated an iota from the details of their experience as they told it initially, and refuse to be silenced by ridicule or even scientific proof that they must be talking nonsense. One can't help admiring these people's fortitude if nothing else.

Their stories are usually very similar. The contactee unexpectedly runs into a 'divine personage' near a landed 'flying saucer', and holds commune with It, Him, or Her. 'Hers' are the commonest, and strangely they are almost invariably blue-eyed blondes with long hair – even in countries like backland Brazil and New Guinea where the average citizen is some shade of brown to blue-black. There have been claims that these divine beings may also be either asexual, or homosexual, or duosexual! Almost invariably these beings give simple but cute names, and allege that they come from one of the planets in our solar system, with a distinct emphasis on Venus. Sometimes they take their human friends there physically in their spaceships, sometimes by astral projection. One and all have a message for us – and this may be summed up by the single word *beware*. Brotherly love is advocated and an immediate banning of 'The Bomb'. Apart from this, I have not read of a single constructive suggestion offered by these divine and allegedly all-wise creatures; nor do they seem ever to have done anything practical for us, or even for themselves, although they say that our performance is endangering their existence. They are almost all princes or princesses and live in the lap of luxury with distinct overtones of debauchery, don't have to work, never quarrel or fight, and devote their time to all

the various forms of love, from the brotherly to the ethereal. (In my personal opinion, they are a pretty dull lot.)

The point here is, however, if the contactees are kicked off on their wild journeys by a real encounter, just what *did* they encounter, and just how much of what they say about it and subsequent events might have any validity? If there are UAO's, they might well have occupants, at least on some occasions. They would seem, from the evidence, to have landed quite often, and many occupants have been said to come out of them. Most of the occupants reported by *non*-contactees have been alleged to be either pygmy, man-sized, or giant hominoids. Since there are now so many reports of such visits by occupants, why haven't those persons who claim to be contactees, or who are so labeled, run into some of the same entities? Personally, I am being forced to accept the fact that the sincere ones, at least, might (watch that qualifying word) have done so. We then have to consider the behavior of the man-sized and man-shaped space people reported by the contactees, and see if it fits in with what the non-contactees have reported.

The blue-eyed blondes certainly coincide; so also do the repeated allegations of 'mental telepathy'. However, in the last respect, while the contactees just say that they talked with their space friends, either by word of mouth or mentally and always in American-type English, several of the non-contactees have asserted that they 'sort of understood in their heads' or that the occupant carried a 'little black box'. The skeptics invariably pounce on this matter of communication as clear evidence of mendacity. They ought to be a bit more cautious. Quite apart from any reality as to the possibility of mental telepathy or talking translator boxes, they should read of the two Peace Corps students at Columbia University in New York who were assigned to an area in West Africa where the language was one that had not been studied or recorded. Much distressed by this, the students, a young married couple, browsed around and finally located two exchange students who spoke the language. With their cooperation, tape-recordings, and the

wife's expertise in hypnosis, the husband learned this highly complicated, agglutinative, and inflectional language in *three weeks*! If space people can monitor our radio and TV, they ought to be able to learn our languages – even down to the tiniest inflection, pronunciation, and accent – in no less a time.

The other great claim of the contactees is of another nature – the abilities of the space people. These include 'flashing on and off', fading or dimming, materialising, and being invisible, all or part of the time.

I am *not* suggesting acceptance of anything that any contactee has ever said; but I *am* advocating some proper investigation of their claims by any and all modern scientific methods. Even if they all did appear to be complete phonies, such an effort would be worth a lot more than amassing roomsful of reports on funny lights. Buried somewhere in their statements there just might be some answers to some aspects of this most pressing problem. Which brings me back to the late Maurice K. Jessup once more.

In 1955, Maurice Jessup wrote a book entitled *The Case for the UFO*. Shortly after its publication, a paperback edition of the book was sent anonymously to the Chief of the Office of Naval Research in Washington, filled with handwritten annotations that implied intimate knowledge of UFO's, their means of motion, their origin, background, history, and the habits of beings occupying UFO's. The notes were written apparently by two or three men, since they not only commented on the text of the book but addressed one another, as though the book had been passed back and forth among them. At about the same time, Maurice Jessup received several strange letters from a man who was quite probably one of those who had written the comments in the book. From the language and style of the inserts, the Office of Naval Research (ONR) speculated that the annotators may be gypsies. They found the book sufficiently interesting to re-publish it three years later in a limited mimeographed edition in two colors – black for the original text, red for the notes, interjections, underscoring,

and the like. The notes discussed people, planes, and ships that have disappeared; the origins of odd storms and clouds, objects falling from the sky, and strange marks and footprints; and other puzzling events and phenomena that we have not been able to explain. 'It is evident,' concluded the introduction to the Navy's mimeographed edition 'that these men provide some very intriguing explanations; explanations that may be worth consideration.' (The introduction to the annotated edition of Jessup's book is given in Appendix C, along with the mysterious letters Jessup received.)

We have seen quite a roster of possible extraterrestrial candidates: pygmies, standard-sized and giant 'occupants'; androids and robots; 'angels', 'devils', 'ghosts', poltergeists, and 'Men in Black'. And now we come to the gypsies! As the introduction to the annotated edition of Jessup's book suggests, these men provide some very intriguing explanations that may be worth consideration. Let us, therefore, consider.

Gypsies are now scattered all over the world. Nobody has ever come up with any satisfactory information as to their origin – at least, not satisfactory to me. Some people say they wandered out of what is now India long ago. They have also been called lost Ancient Egyptians, and goodness knows what else, even by ethnologists, while, according to the mystics, they originated even on Mars, Venus, or in other dimensions! We don't know much about their current culture, despite the massive studies of their folklore and customs that have been undertaken in Europe, this country, and elsewhere. As a kid I did a lot of poaching with some gypsies of my own age in the New Forest in England, and we had some fine rabbit stews and spitted pheasants as a result; but my young friends, though never having been to school and being totally illiterate, always made me feel as if I were the only 'kid' among them, and that they were infinitely adult and wise. They were, too!

But the Western gypsies are relatively 'normal and respectable' compared to the Asiatic *Luli*. Since the dawn of history these bands of independent and completely self-

contained people have wandered about at will all over Asia, helping themselves to what they needed but never actually marauding or interfering with other people, and trading in all manner of psychedelic products, elixirs, drugs, and medicines, gazing into crystal balls – the origin of which, incidentally, has never been discovered – prophecying and reading palms. They have no written language, yet they seem to keep in touch over vast distances, even with their confreres in Europe and over the oceans. Subjected to a never-ending series of persecutions, they do truly just 'fade away', only to pop up again later apparently in no way changed. They learn the languages of the peoples among whom they dwell, and they often contend that they know no other.

The Hebrews, and others who have adopted the Jewish religion, also have an extraordinary record of both survival and of integration with other peoples, without having lost their identity; but this is founded on intellectualism and advanced moral, educational, and ethical standards. The gypsies have none of these; and, in fact, their morals and ethics are quite contrary to those of the rest of us; yet they also survive – in fact, they thrive – and they seem virtually indestructible, cropping up in the oddest places and in the most unexpected circumstances.

We have now disposed, within the limited space available, of two possible types of uninvited guests – the occupants, and what I suppose we must call the permanents. We are still left with a third lot – the invisibles – though I suppose one or any of the others could be candidates for this class, should they possess the know-how.

Invisibility is a ticklish subject and there are those who feel, and often very strongly, that it has no place in ufological discussion. With this attitude I beg to differ, and simply because it is constantly cropping up in this field, and in all manner of ways. To what we know can be done with infrared photography we must now add the matter of 'delayed results' in this field.

An associate of mine and professional reporter, Walter J. McGraw, witnessed and recorded some examples of this

technique in the offices and laboratories of the Barnes Corporation of Stamford, Conn. To be brief, he was first asked to stand against a blank wall in an office for a few moments and then move to the other side of the room. A special Polaroid camera was then brought from another room, unsealed, and focused on the wall; almost immediately it obtained a clear and recognisable photograph of my colleague. Second, he was left alone in a room and asked to place a hand, palm down, anywhere and briefly, on a freshly polished table. This done, another instrument was then brought in which scanned the table top until it found the place where his hand had been. Next, another Polaroid camera was brought in to photograph this spot. A print, clear enough to check the lines and whorls on his fingers, was obtained.

It was reported in the science columns of our leading dailies – including the *New York Times* – after the missile confrontation in Cuba that photographs were obtained of the movements of the glowing heads of cigarettes that had been smoked by workers on the missile stations, *the night before*! Our knowledge of this field of investigation is a great deal more advanced than is generally realised.

This is the established scientific periphery of the business of invisibility. At the opposite side are the strange photographs alleged to have been taken by Trevor James, described earlier. In between lie some other items of a most startling nature. The first is the photograph of the helmeted and white-space-suited figure that appeared on the quite ordinary film of an ordinary camera wielded by the man who took the now-famous photograph of his little daughter in a hay field in England.

There are thousands and thousands of photographs of 'invisibles' offered by the spiritists, spiritualists, and others of the occult fraternity, but we will not take these into account in this discussion. Although the little girl photo is not the only one taken inadvertently by a nonbeliever, it has been most thoroughly investigated by the photographic departments of the Royal Air Force, and therefore is worth more

than all of those others put together. It will suffice to make my point that the whole subject of invisibles should be investigated, rather than scoffed at and arbitrarily tossed out.

To reiterate, I am not referring here to that seething mass of invisibles claimed by the occultists, such as spirits, departed or otherwise, ghosts, and so forth. That forms quite another subject and one that does not have any legitimate claim to inclusion in a discussion and analysis of ufological matters. Nonetheless, I might suggest that some of the aspects of ufology might profitably be considered by those interested in occultism. A possible link between the two fields might be the poltergeist (I say this because these display the attributes of living entities). The general consensus among many psychologists and parapsychologists today seems to be that these manifestations are extensions of the nonmaterial part of human beings, which can, as the engineers say, 'do work' of a physical nature at distance. However, there is a form of poltergeist that resides permanently in one location which performs its physical manifestations for anybody and everybody, anytime, but apparently at its own volition – including when nobody is around. I am not suggesting that poltergeists come out of UAO's, but I am saying that the existence of this independent class of poltergeist makes the possibility of invisibles more tenable.

CHAPTER X

Where Do They Come From? How?

If you are interested in ufology, your first hurdle is that same awful question I'm frequently asked: 'Do you believe in flying saucers?' Next you will probably be faced with what was our initial question: 'What are they?' which means nothing, unless rephrased as: 'What *could* they be?' Then, if your interrogator is still with you, you will invariably be asked, 'Where do they come from?' Why, just because you affirm that some roses appear to be red, should you be expected to have the answer to the origin of the whole plant family of the *Rosaceae*? It beats me. I suppose this is the way 'experts' are created. So, okay, where *could* UAO's and UFO's come from?

Most UAO's and UFO's could very possibly have originated on or near our own planet. This may sound ridiculous, but before you assume that I mean they come out of hollow earth, from caves, from under the Antarctic ice cap, or even from the bottom of the oceans, please consider Dr Hynek's statement to the effect that most likely (from a scientific point of view) they are 'natural phenomena'. This expression actually means that (in a case such as this) the phenomenon is 'natural' *to this earth.* While there is nothing impossible about the suggestion that UAO's reside on the bottom of our seas and oceans, the probability is of a fairly low order. On the other hand, the suggestion that they might be indigenous to our upper atmosphere, or to the immediate vicinity of the earth in inner-space – even in Jessup's 'nodal points' where earth-moon-sun gravitic forces are neutralised – is of a much higher order of probability.

Nonetheless, there is a catch here too.

If these things, or some of them, are indigenous to our immediate environment, but reside and/or buzz about in the extreme upper atmosphere or in what we call 'space' immediately outside that, there would not seem to be anything to prevent them from wandering off into true space. Given time and the ability to survive inner space, why could they not also wander on into outer space – which is to say, beyond the orbit of Pluto? So we come right back to the initial premise that they 'come from space'. Actually, this does not make them any less 'natural'. The moon, comets, and meteorites are quite 'natural'.

The likelihood of the material UAO's and UFO's coming from other planets in our solar system is of a fairly high order of probability. But whether they originated there and/or are indigenous to any such bodies is much less probable. We used to look upon the moon as a dead world, and wondered why it was so pockmarked with what we call craters. The popular notion was that, being dead and having no atmosphere, it had been peppered throughout time by meteorites and other rogue bodies. We now know that it is not completely 'dead', or completely lacking in atmosphere. At the same time, we have discovered that the planet Mars is likewise pockmarked, and we have also discovered something else. Our own beloved earth is also.

This discovery began in the Canadian government department concerned with the aerial mapping of that country. After the great Chubb Crater on the Ungava peninsula had been officially confirmed as a meteor-impact phenomenon, like our Barringer Crater in Arizona, a wise but seemingly rather retiring cartographer in Ottawa took a second look at the magnificent aerial-survey photographs of his country and, after some diligent study, pointed out that, despite the effects of erosion, the whole northern part of our continent is likewise peppered with impact craters. Somewhat startled by this discovery, other cartographers got to work and, within a few years in the 1950's, turned up hundreds more such craters, obviously both quite 'new', and 'fossilised', all

over the world. The largest were in Ghana and in South Africa, the latter being no less than 132 miles in diameter. (Incidentally, it has been pointed out by Robert S. Dietz in *Scientific American* for August, 1961, that if any object large enough to make such a crater on land plunged into an ocean, it would create a 20,000-foot wave that would wash out a whole continent; and that, since almost three-quarters of the earth is covered by water, quite a number of such 'astroblemes', as he calls them, must have so landed. But this is another story.)

The point I wish to make here is that just because the moon, and now Mars, are found to be pockmarked and therefore look dead, does not mean that they are – any more than our earth is. And don't forget the statements of our astronauts to the effect that there is no indication of life down here from even a little way up.

So, it's possible that at least some UAO's could hail from our sister planets. In fact, the bumbling 'saucer-boys', who currently seem to be most active here, could well come from some such body as Mars – it being roughly of the same age as our planet; but provided also that our solar system did come into existence as a unit. Martians could be at just about our stage of development, in intelligence, and even a little ahead technically. So also could Venusians, Saturnians, and even Neptunians, one must suppose. But since we don't have an iota of proof that any UAO occupants have come from such bodies – apart from the unsubstantiated statements of the contactees – further speculation is worthless. In other words, these things could come from almost anywhere. However, one may still legitimately indulge in some basic logic.

Let us take those UAO's that seem to be devices constructed by intelligences and piloted or controlled by such. We must assume, first, that they are made like us and our machines, and that they are of roughly the same composition. If so, where would they most likely have 'evolved' and/or been constructed? Obviously, on a planet nearly similar to ours. This could be in our solar system – within some limits – or it could be on a planet like ours in another solar system,

either in our or some other galaxy. The stumbling block here is not the limits of parallel evolution nor even any relic obeisance to religious tradition, but simply the question: 'How could they get here?'

And this brings us, squarely and frontally, to the real pith of the whole UAO business – ITF, or instant transference. Since the whole subject is unacceptable to both the average person and the average scientist, it is best introduced, I think, by a straight report. Here are the facts.

Thoughout recorded history, things – notably objects – have been stated to have 'turned up', or otherwise just appeared spontaneously where they were not immediately before, or where they should not have appeared in the light of common sense. This has always worried pragmatists like Roman senators as well as latter-day policemen and scientists, just as it has delighted mystics, occultists, spiritists, spiritualists, and pseudoscientists.

Then came Charle Fort, who not only had the impertinence to collect what he called 'data' on such appearances – and disappearances – but had the audacity to document the cases. Of course, few people paid the slightest attention to him.

I wrote an article on the subject of how UFO's and all manner of objects could get here which appeared in the May, 1963 issue of the magazine *Fate*. In this article I coined the term 'ITF' to avoid the tongue-twister 'instant transference' and also the somewhat ambiguous term 'teleportation' (which means literally 'far-carrying') coined by Fort. Less than a week after my subscription copy of that issue of the magazine reached me, I happened to be in the Pentagon and received an impromptu and gratuitous briefing on UAO's. After listening to some frank talk on that subject by a higher-echelon security officer, I chanced to ask if I could get an introduction – as an accredited reporter – to the scientists who according to popular publications were alleged to be working on (what I called for simplicity's sake) 'teleportation' – and I mentioned the outfit and its location.

The result of this simple question was explosive. The officer who had been briefing me and a number of other ranking officers present literally blew their tops. I was bawled at, and almost threatened. I was told that 'we don't mention that subject' and that he did not know the names of the people concerned – nor anybody who did! Having once been involved in intelligence work for some years, I was alert to a subsequent slip by the senior officer who, after further berating me, said, 'And anyhow, we don't call it teleportation any more; we call it ITF!'

Since I was not told not to mention this incident, I can only assume that it is not considered to be a matter of national security. A colleague who was present even asked if it was off the record. All we got in response was coffee and some cookies served by a uniformed female minion. But it would appear that sciencedom, apparently backed by officialdom, in at least this country, is hot on the trail of what is now known by the term ITF. So what is it, and how does it fit into the UAO picture?

This is an extremely difficult matter to explain. Further, it literally flies in the face of all that is orthodox. It even questions Einstein's universally accepted $E=MC^2$. And it goes to the very fundamentals of existence.

In a nutshell it means that the speed of light, or anything else, is not an ultimate but merely another 'turn-over-point', like the speed of sound (at any particular degree of density of air).

As a matter of fact, Einstein himself stated shortly before he died – and I have heard a tape recording of this – that he had never said that the speed of light was ultimate; but he *did* say that at around 180,000 miles per second mass would become infinite – that your backside would become your frontside and time would come to a stop.

In other words, there is no reason, theoretical or otherwise, why that particular speed cannot be exceeded; and, if it can be, one might get time-inversion and other distressing conditions.

A great deal has been conjectured about approaching the

'speed of light'. Take for example an imaginary pair of identical twins, one of whom takes off on a space trip, while his twin stays on earth. Sixty years later, Twin No. 1 would come back only 'x' number of years or hours older (according to his speed of travel); while Twin No. 2 – if still alive – could be an octogenarian.

There are other tricks you can play with 'time'. The mystics love to suggest that the past, the present (if it exists at all), and the future are all '*now*'. Then, there are the nuclear physicists who are dabbling in reversed time, and their colleagues in the presently muddy field of counter-matter and anti-matter – whatever the latter may mean. It does seem, nevertheless, as if effect does not always have to follow cause, and that 'mind' (whatever that is) may be able to transcend what we call time. However, to paraphrase the late Winston Churchill, these are matters which I am not personally interested with.

If ITF exists, what might it mean to ufology? Virtually any 'natural' process can, it must be presumed, be analysed by intelligent beings and then duplicated. Such intelligent beings, once shorn of belief, tradition, and plain egocentric narrow-mindedness, should be able in time to figure out and duplicate almost any such process. There is considerable evidence to indicate that the intelligencies behind the UAO's have done so – and some of them might have done so long ago. If any did, it could explain a lot of things that puzzle us

Objects can, as we mentioned earlier, be real, or material, or else para-real or quasi-real. Here we get into the matter of reflections and projections. Take, for instance, a movie. You sit down to see a picture in which, say, Miss Gina Lollobrigida is starring. The lights go out, the film comes on, and there is the lady – and nobody can mistake her. But if the reel slips, or the power fails . . . *plutt* . . . no Miss Lollobrigida. If the house lights come on, she just pales to oblivion. The lovely lady appears, but can then 'vanish', either by degrees in intensity or instantly – just like some UAO's. But Miss Lollobrigida is (at least as of the time of writing) still with us, though she is not, *per se*, physically

in our neighborhood theater. She is, in fact, nothing but a projection, or an apparition.

Now take the late Miss Marilyn Monroe. You can relax in a motel room and watch this exquisite example of femininity, second-hand, on a TV screen. She's *there*, all right, and nobody would attempt to deny your identification of her, but the dear girl herself has been dead for some years. That's a *retarded* projection.

Now take a look at yourself in a mirror. You're not there either; but you are, and that is a *reflection*. Yet, if you believe that your reflection is not there, get hold of a one-way mirror and have someone trace your outline and features from your reflection. This does prove that your image or reflection *is* there.

Now what of UAO's? There is an excellent publication entitled *Flying Saucer Review* that has been published in England since 1955, in which has appeared more than one article on this subject by a competent technologist. These articles sensibly have avoided that horror so beloved of the cranks – the 'fourth dimension' – but have suggested just how such projections and reflections of objects could be observed by us, either simultaneously or at another time, or in another set of dimensions. The principles involved are most lucidly discussed in these articles. There is also a fairly strong suspicion that some mirages may be of this nature, and this brings us to another point.

Reference books offer a rather glib explanation of mirages – to wit, that they are 'reflections' of things beyond (and thus below) the horizon. Unfortunately this actually does not always seem to be the case. There are for instance the difficult-to-explain 'mirages' that are alleged to have plagued southern Sweden for many years. These are said to be apparent to everybody, in clear daylight in the sky above, and sometimes to be so clear that 'people' may be seen going about what looks like their daily business among white picket fences, old-fashioned houses, gardens, and towering castles, all perfectly clear but shimmering a bit like a tridimensional, wide-screen, full-color, silent, movie.

In 1928 there was a French movie crew in Morocco who said they had witnessed a vast fleet of 14th Century ships sail out of the Atlantic – in the sky above their heads – only to vanish in the murk hanging over the Sahara behind them. These ships were said to be so clear that the emblems on their pennants could later be identified in Portuguese and Spanish archives as being those of a combined fleet of those two nations which once – and only once – escorted some Turkish vessels back from the New World. One cameraman claimed to have identified Turkish emblems on a ship with lateen sails!

Banging your way across space by rocket or other reaction drive, be it solid- or liquid-fueled, or using photon, free ion, or what-have-you drive, would be thoroughly inefficient. There are plenty of books by topnotch scientists and technologists that will tell you just how inefficient such engines are, and how it would be 'impossible' to get to even the nearest star by such means. The 'mass' of the fuel required would be prohibitive, and the time required for the trip excessive. Who wants to go off, even in deep-freeze, for a hundred years just to find out if another star has some planets, and then face another century coming back to report that there aren't any – and possibly, return to a sterile, radioactive planet without so much as an amoeba left on it?

But if we had ITF . . . ? To go instantly almost anywhere would solve the problem of interstellar travel. That is why we suggest that the UAO creators *have* mastered such a procedure, and that they are exploting both it and us. However, if we presume to assume that ITF could be a reality, and that it has been mastered by intelligencies, what might the results be?

First off, ITF would result in and account for both instantaneous appearances and disappearances of objects. And this could apply both to UAO's themselves and to their occupants if suitably equipped. Since we have not yet got the foggiest notion as to how ITF might work, we must be more than a bit lenient with this supposition. It might be achieved with the aid of little black boxes, but it might just

as well be accomplished by 'taking thought upon the matter'. No one knows just what are the limits of the mind, or what outgoing, as well as receptive, power it possesses.

There is a fellow named Ted Serios who claims to have demonstrated that by the power of his mind he can take photographs of buildings all around the earth that he has never ever been near – and even by using cameras from which the lenses have been removed. So perhaps some highly intelligent life-forms can just 'think' themselves here from elsewhere. (I doubt it, but one should be cautious.)

It has been said that regressing in time could be logical but that progressing in it would not. This is reasonable. Put it this way: If a Roman Senator cropped up on Capitol Hill, he would have had to have the means to ITF himself to our present. But the poor chap would probably still be worrying about Scipio's African campaign or the value of bar gold in Gaul, and would almost certainly never have heard of 'time', short of a sand clock. But a fellow from somewhere away ahead of us who *has* discovered ITF might well come back. At the same time, such a chap might be able to go forward. So, if any such intelligent entities could thus 'flash on and off', both space- and time-wise, we would almost inevitably end up with invisibles, who could exist on a time scale quite different from ours.

If viruses can go through a dozen generations in a minute, such entities might do so in the same time or in less (of our time). What about that 'space man' who appears in the photograph of the little girl? Was he there all the time, but invisible (except to some photographic film sensitive to certain bands other than or beyond our normal vision), or did he just happen to 'flash on' at the instant that the girl's father snapped the shot?

We're back then to the pertinent question: *Are* there invisibles among us, and, if so, where do they come from, how did they get here, what are they up to, and when did they start coming?

CHAPTER XI

When Did They Start Coming and Why?

If you are prepared to take an entirely pragmatic and logical view of the facts and reports we have so far assembled, I feel you may be willing to agree that there is at least a reasonable possibility that some UAO's are spaceships, that some of them carry occupants, and that some of these living entities have stepped out on to the surface of our earth. The next sensible question is therefore: 'When have they done so?' and, leading from this: 'Is there any concrete evidence that they have done so?'

We have already, at least in part, explored the first question and noted that such an event could have taken place at any time from today 'back' in time, possibly to infinity. We have also hinted at the rather distressing new concept that such visits may also have taken place from any time in the future! The essential matter at hand now is, therefore, to try to date what concrete evidence we have to prove that some intelligent beings, or beings controlled by intelligencies, have been on this planet.

This historical aspect of ufology is best treated in reverse, starting with the ephemeral 'present' and probing backward as far as we can. Events in this field during the twenty years from 1947 to 1967 are already grossly overdocumented, although scientists and the general public are only just now getting around to reading and properly assessing this mass of material. Further, there has been a universal impression that UFO's or UAO's only got here for the first time in 1947, and, conversely, that none had been reported before. This is a complete misconception.

True, more people per hour now report observations of UAO's than ever before, but this is due to several new factors. More people keep a watch on all the skies of the world with better instrumental aids to vision. Radar has come to be. And more people are abandoning their old beliefs and prejudices, shaking off their fear of ridicule, and becoming increasingly confident of their ability to interpret what they see.

Records of UFO's and UAO's extend back through all written history and, as far as we have been able to discover, in every country in the world. Rock paintings and carvings that seem to depict the same thing extend back to Paleolithic times. Besides these we have a number of most extraordinary 'fossil' artifacts that carry the history back for millions and possibly hundreds of millions more years into the past.

We have space only to give a few examples and try to explain their salient aspects. To clarify this procedure an admittedly rather arbitrary chronology may be constructed. This goes as follows:

The Modern Period: 1947 – 1967
The Inter-Period: 1930 – 1947
The Fortean Period: 1800 – 1930
The Medieval Period: 400 – 1800
The Classical Period: 3000 B.C. – 400 A.D.
The Prehistoric Period: 30,000 B.C. – 3000 B.C.
The Geologic Period: prior to 30,000 B.C.

Let us begin with the significant year 1946 that fell between the end of World War II and Kenneth Arnold's famous report that started the term 'flying saucer'. This also marks the end of the inter-period, (1930–1947) which was initiated by the death of Charles Fort, the principal chronicler of ufology in the early scientific age from 1800–1930. During this inter-period, almost sole credit for carrying his torch must go to the Fortean Society, founded in his memory by a number of leading intellectuals under the guidance of the late Tiffany Thayer. This society published a small magazine entitled *Doubt* that started in September,

1937. There is a gap of about a decade, between the end of Fort's personal work and the inception of this publication, from which I know of no extant collected records. I personally started collecting such records in Europe in 1929, and continued there and in Latin America until 1939, but unfortunately almost all of my material was destroyed in the bombing of London, where it was stored. However, we have at least an almost continuous record of reports running back over a century and a half.

The number of individual reports recorded between 1800 and 1947 is, of course, unknown and can never be known unless we search every issue of every newspaper, magazine, and scientific and other periodical, in all languages, published during that period. However, after indexing Fort's works, *Doubt*, and my own and some other files, we got somewhere near the five thousand mark some years ago, and we have discovered several hundred more since then. The annual rate drops precipitately (going backward) at the beginning of the 19th Century, and then (still going backward) tails off progressively. However, there were peak periods in various countries, which coincide with upswings in cultural and literary output. A friend of mine, the Rabbi Yonah ibn Aharon, a Spanish and Quiché scholar, informs me that ufology appears to show a continuous thread right through Peruvian and Inca history, as far as it is known from both early Spanish writings and from archaeological investigations.

That ufological material tapers off into the past is to be expected because of the ever-diminishing volume of preserved literature available to us today in which such reports might have been recorded. However, in the prosecution of research into this matter for nearly forty years now, I am forever being surprised by stumbling across 'bunches' of new source material in ancient and medieval literature – information that his simply never been specifically noticed or gathered by anybody. The works of Plinius Secundus and of later Roman writers are full of reports. Mesopotamian literature proves to contain a lot. Reports crop up in Ancient

Egyptian writings on several subjects, and run right through Veddic and other Indian works. The Chinese also have kept many records. The earliest 'historical' records are some Japanese, Indian, and Saharan cave paintings that almost amount to 'written' records.

All of this material, however, still qualifies only as reports. It is not concrete evidence, and before proceeding to the latter, I should perhaps mention a few high spots in the written and depicted record that seem to me to present an entirely new aspect of ufology.

Again going backward from 1947, there is, first, the outburst over southern Sweden immediately after the end of World War II which lasted for over a year, and in which the flying boxcars were born. Prior to that, there were the so-called foo-fighters and our green lights that so pestered both sides during that war – both being convinced that they were a new secret weapon of the enemy. Prior to World War II, one can go back to the fabulous year of 1897 when the most extraordinary incidents were recorded in great numbers by literally millions of people, and almost all over the world. Prior to that, there is a gap in reporting caused principally, I believe, by the demise of the Scottish physicist Sir David Brewster, who was principal of the University of Edinburgh, a founder of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, and who was not only deeply interested in such matters but fostered an interest in them all over Europe for thirty years. One man so fostered was R. P. Greg, a Fellow of the Royal Society of London, and it was he who left us the most extraordinary body of published evidence that we have, prior to Fort.

As mentioned in Chapter IV, Greg published a long paper as a report to the British Association, in 1860, entitled *A Catalogue of Meteorites and Fireballs, from A.D. 2 to A.D. 1860*. In his preamble, Greg states, 'This catalogue is intended partly as a sequel to the *Reports on Luminous Meteors*, now continued for a series of years in the British Association Reports.' This paper runs to 60 pages, of which 57 are nothing but a listing, in small print. This list is not,

however, as the author entitles his paper, merely of 'meteorites and fireballs'. It also includes meteors and a number of items that could not possibly have been any of these three natural phenomena – at least as we now define them. These oddities are recorded as having made stops, starts, and right-angle turns; to have hovered, yawed, or bounced along; to have flashed on and off; and to have done just about all the other things that UAO's have now been reported to do. Further, there are reports here of angel-hair and of devil jelly, and a number of other substances only too familiar to the modern ufologist. Greg's series on luminous meteors is even more illuminating, because he seems to have been 'on to something' in that he classes UAO-like 'lights' and UAP's in this catalog rather than in with the meteorites and fireballs.

While Greg takes us back to Pliny in the written record, it was Brewster who first linked the ancient world to modern archaeology – vis-à-vis ufology – for he published material on what I can only describe as 'ufological hardware', otherwise known erroneously today in certain circles as 'erratics' but called by my associates 'OOPTH's', or 'Out Of Place THings'. (The title 'erratic' should be confined to the definition geologists give to rocks or boulders found in or upon strata of a completely different composition; the most outstanding of these were transported by ice during the last glacial ice cap advances.)

The concrete evidence for the prior colonisation of, or visits to, this planet by technologically advanced entities, either intelligent or under the guidance of superior intelligencies, falls under three major heads: (1) these OOPTH's, and notably what we call OOPART's or 'Out Of Place ARTifacts', (2) reports out of Russia of a funny little 'lost' (but now allegedly found) tribe of small people in western China, and some of their artifacts, and finally (3) medieval maps based on ancient works that reveal a highly accurate knowledge of the geography of presumably undiscovered areas of the world.

If we were to try to adhere to a strictly reverse chronology,

Year.	Day of month.	Locality.	Size or weight.
1836.*	Feb. 8	Rivoli, Piedmont	.....
a *	Jan. 12	Cherbourg	⅔ moon
	Apr. 21	Rossano, Calabria	large
	June 10	Sury, Département de Loire	> Venus
*	Aug. 20	Illinois, U. S.	large
	Sept. 18	Florence	.....
	Oct. 18	Breslau	large
b	Nov. 5	Havre, Southampton	large as moon
?	22	Silesia	.....
*	Dec. 11	Macao, Brazil	sp. gr. 3·72
?	?	Platten-See, Hungary	.....
c 1837.*	Jan. 5	Vesoul; Toulouse	= ⅔ moon
*	15	Mikolowa, Hungary	.....
d ?	Apr. 15	Austria	6 ozs.
e *	May 5	East Bridgewater	½ lb. +
*	July 21	Gross-Divina, Hungary	10 lbs.
f	Aug. 5	Newhaven, U. S.	large
	29	Upper Silesia	.....
g	30	Cork, S. Ireland	> moon
*	Aug.	Esnaune, Charente	3 lbs.
	Sept. 21	Aigle; Paris	large
	Nov. 1	Milan	.....
	Dec. 14	Connecticut, U. S.	> Venus
	30	Trebnitz	.....
1838.	Jan. 2	Breslau	large
h	Mar. 17	Kensington, London	5′ *diam.*
*	Apr. 18	Akburpoor, India	4 lbs.
	May 18	Michigan, New York	.....
*	June 6	Chandakapore, Berar, India	.....
i	Aug. 9	Germany	.....
*	Oct. 13	Cape of Good Hope	many
	Nov. 13	Cherbourg	large
	16	Condé-sur-Noir	.....
	?	Palmacottah; S. India	= moon
1839.	Jan. 6	Milan	.....
	12	Parma	.....
	Feb. 6	ditto	.....
*	13	Little Piney, U. S.	50 lbs.?

This excerpt from R. P. Greg's Catalogue of Meteorites and Fireballs, *published in 1860, shows the range of objects in the sky reported in just three years, from 1836 to 1839. A footnote to the entry of January 2, 1836, reads, 'Seemed to rotate on its axis: crackling, whistling sounds heard . . .' Footnotes for other objects describe such unusual actions as 'At first W. to E., then when over the Adriatic Sea, turned back and passed over the kingdom of Naples . . .'*

Direction.	Duration; rate; hour.	Remarks, &c.
.....	7 A.M.	large meteor and detonation.
.....	6½ P.M.	cast shadows; detonation heard at Coutances.
.....	.....	like a wooden beam on fire.
S. to N.	.....	brilliant; did not burst; white before and reddish tail.
.....	streak 15′	during sunshine; explosion and noise; 4 P.M.
.....	10 A.M.	fireball. A doubtful substance found? electrical?.
.....	.....	short tail; no noise.
straight down	slow	pale; 3rd or 6th of November; seen at sea.
.....	.....	atmospheric explosion. [stones from 1 lb. to 80 lb.
5 A.M. or	11½ P.M.	large meteor; burst with noise; very large shower of
.....	.....	Stone-fall (Brit. Assoc. Reports); =Szala, 1834?.
N.N.E. to S.S.W.	3″; slow	tailed; light as day; detonated loudly; 1¼ A.M.
.....	5 P.M.	Stone-fall (Poggendorff).
.....	.....	Stone-fall. See Thomson's Meteorology.
.....	3½ P.M.	meteor and fall of nine small *stones*; sp. gr. 2·16.
.....	noon	Stone-fall; sp. gr. 3·55.
S.W. to N.W.	1′	equal sun-light; like molten iron.
.....	slow	with reddish tail.
S.S.W. to N.N.E.	quick	oval; bluish; burst into red stars.
.....	.....	Stone-fall. France.
.....	6½″	cast shadows. Dauphine.
.....	.....	fireball.
.....	1″ to 5″	streak 10″ visible; seen over the whole state.
N. to S.	.....	by day-light; bright silver-white; sparks after.
N.E. to S.W.	streak 2′	cast shadows; blue, red.
N.W. to N.E.?	30° in 1½″	large bolide; brilliant; streak 10′; tailed.
.....	.....	Stone-fall; near Cawnpore.
.....	.....	brilliant meteor; burst; also seen in Canada.
.....	.....	Stone-fall; 3 fragments; sp. gr. 3·53.
.....	streak 10″	fine meteor; or August 10.
N.W. to S.E.	9½ A.M.	Stone-fall; carbonaceous-like; at Bokkewelde.
horizontal	quick	fireball.
.....	.....	a fine meteor.
.....	streak 20′	gradually paled and faded away.
.....	.....	fireball.
.....	.....	ditto.
.....	.....	ditto.
N.E. to S.W.	3½ P.M.	Stone-fall; sp. gr. 3·5. Pulaski county.

this order itself would have to be reversed, but it is better to proceed from the general to the particular, and from the most cryptic to the most concrete. OOPART's may be questioned on several grounds, though they cannot be denied, and so they still demand an explanation.

OOPART's are obviously and undeniably manufactured or artificial objects said to have been found *inside* solid, undisturbed rock strata, just as fossil animals and plants are found. Associated with these are a number of artifacts stick-

ing *out* of similarly solid rock, just as the denser and more resistant bones of fossil animals may stick out due to weathering. There are also quite a large number of others that have come up from deep borings for water or oil.

The list of known and alleged OOPART's is now surprisingly extensive, considering that practically nobody has taken them seriously until recently. Once again, it was Sir David Brewster who initiated the serious approach by presenting some brief notices, in various scientific journals in the mid-1800's, of such objects having been found inside undisturbed rock strata. His most famous citations are of some flat-headed, *steel* nails found deep in a sandstone quarry in Scotland (steel is a modern development), and of some fine gold threads found in similar circumstances inside a large block of quarried limestone in northern England. Brewster does not identify the strata from which these objects were obtained but, from the exact locations he gives and a perusal of the geological maps of the British Isles, the sandstone would appear to be Permian and the limestone Cretaceous. These periods are now dated as of approximately 200 million and 100 million years ago respectively. However, one of the nails was protruding up into a bed of what is called 'till' that lay uncomformably over the previously eroded surface of the sandstone. The sandstone could therefore possibly be of only slightly greater age than the till, which could have been as recent as the last glacial advance, only 20,000 years ago. Nevertheless, who, we may well ask, was manufacturing steel nails in Paleolithic times?

Till figures also in perhaps the most extraordinary of all OOPART's which was blasted out of solid rock in New England in 1851. This was reported in *Scientific American* for 1851–52, as follows:

> 'A few days ago, a powerful blast was made in the rock at Meeting House Hill, in Dorchester, a few rods south of Reverend Mr Hall's meeting house. The blast threw out an immense mass of rock, some of the pieces weighing several tons, and scattered small fragments in all

> directions. Among them was picked up a metallic vessel in two parts, rent asunder by the explosion. On putting the two parts together, it formed a bell-shaped vessel, four and one-half inches high, six and one-half inches at the base, and two and one-half inches at the top, and about an eighth of an inch in thickness. The body of this vessel resembles zinc in color, or a composition material, in which there is a considerable portion of silver. On the sides there are six figures of a flower or bouquet, beautifully inlaid with pure silver, and around the lower part of the vessel a vine or wreath, inlaid also with silver. The chasing, carving, and inlaying are exquisitely done by the art of some cunning workman. This curious and unknown vessel was blown out of the pudding stone fifteen feet below the surface . . . there is no doubt but that this curiosity was blown out of the rock as above stated . . . the matter is worthy of investigation, as there is no deception.'

It must be clearly understood that 'till' or tillite, which is a recongealed conglomerate of boulders with sand, silt, and so forth, is the product of a glacial ice cap bulldozing a landscape. The commonest 'tills' are residues of the last ice advances of what is called the Pleistocene period, that took place during the last million years. However, there are much more ancient 'tillites' left from previous so-called 'ice ages'. One ice age came at the end of the Permian (some 200 million years ago) in the northern hemisphere, and it now is believed that there was a minor one at the end of the Cretaceous, some 80 million years ago. Most of the till left by the last ice age is not congealed into a solid rock or tillite; yet, this 'metallic vessel' is specifically stated to have been blasted out of 'a vast mass of rock.'

Even if we assume that all these and several other objects said to have come out of tills or tillites were encased only during the last ice age, we are still confronted with a neat problem, since that age came to a close, progressively from the south to the north in the Northern Hemisphere, between

20,000 and 10,000 years ago.

A much greater enigma is presented by the items that have been found in coal. This substance has been deposited on the surface of this earth at various times but most notably in what is called the Carboniferous (and specifically the Upper Carboniferous, so-called, or Pennsylvanian of America) which is calculated to be from 270 to 230 millions of years old; and from the Miocene of the Tertiary Era estimated to be from 26 to 12 million years of age. From it several items have appeared that confound just about everything we believe. For instance, it has been reported that in 1891 a Mrs Culp of Morrisonville, Illinois, dropped a shovelful of coal in transferring it to her cooking range, and a large lump broke in two, disclosing a lovely little gold chain of intricate workmanship neatly coiled and embedded.

Another example is an object now in the museum at Salzburg, Austria. This is a perfect little cube of meteoritic nickel-iron (which is actually a form of steel), about two inches square but with two opposing sides somewhat convex or domed. It weighs 728 grams (about 28 ounces) and has a specific gravity of 7.75. Most odd, there is a precisely turned, deep groove or incision completely encircling it. This object has been examined endlessly by technicians and others and declared definitely to have been 'constructed' by manufacture and probably from a block of meteoritic nickel-iron; but by machining. It was found in a block of coal taken from a Miocene strata.

The subject of OOPART's is now considerable and warrants separate study. It is of importance here only because it presents enigmas that could be resolved and rendered understandable on the assumption that intelligent creatures of superior technical ability were on, or visited, this earth long before our species attained to such standards.

But how, you may ask, do these things constitute evidence of visitations by extraterrestrials? The point is well taken, so let me put it this way.

First, with rare exceptions, you cannot stuff, or otherwise get a solid object into another solid object – provided we

follow current logic – unless it is fossilised, which means that it was dropped into the latter when it was still plastic and accumulating. Objects can be sunk into sand that subsequently becomes dehydrated, compressed, and solidified into sandstone or, in deserts, moistened, so that the grains are cemented together. Lava and other volcanic material when molten can flow over and enclose solid objects and then solidify. But the commonest form of fossilisation is in soft deposits covering the floors of oceans, seas, lakes, lagoons, and swamps or bogs. These deposits form what we call sedimentary rocks, formations, and strata.

Second, geologists have now worked out a strict chronology for the strata of sedimentary origin, and this chronology has now been proven as to the ages of the various strata by new 'dating' methods, using radiocarbon, osmium, radium-disintegration, and other techniques. If, therefore, a 'foreign' object such as an animal or plant fossil is found in a rock, its age can be determined with considerable accuracy. If an artifact is found in similar conditions, its age can likewise be given. But nothing, be it a rock or an artifact, can turn up in a strata older than itself.

Third, man and related forms from which he appears to have descended or to have ascended are now known to have been around for about 1.75 million years which, geologically speaking, is almost no time at all, in view of the new dating for the oldest rocks known on the earth at 4.5 billions of our years.

Fourth, while our dawn ancestors appear to have bashed one side off pebbles to give them a better chopping edge, and later types seem to have chipped stones, bones, teeth, and antlers for similar purposes and even ended up by polishing them, and were thus manufacturing objects, we have no evidence that they got around to 'constructing' things until comparatively recently and possibly not until about 50,000 years ago. Metallurgy came much later, only some 10,000 to 7,000 years ago, it seems.

In view of these four points, anything found *in* a rock that antedates its first discovery and appearance in this chron-

ology is an 'out of place object'. It then has to be accounted for.

There are only three alternatives by way of explanation. All are a positive insult to our current scientific understanding of the nature of things, to history, and to just about everything else. They are (1) that there were advanced civilisations on this earth at various times, even before the 1.75-million-year mark, (2) that ITF does exist in nature and that objects that vanish at one point and come out at another can achieve the latter in another solid, by somehow elbowing sufficient molecules out of the way or by causing those molecules, in turn, to 'teleport' elsewhere to make room for them, or (3) that these objects were dropped or left on this earth by visitors of higher cultures who came from elsewhere.

Now, if these OOPART's were only crude stone or bone implements, and were embedded in strata only a little older, geologically speaking, than, say, the 1.75-million-year mark, we might legitimately conclude that we just have not yet dug back far enough to reach the earliest tool-making hominids. However, I know of no reports of such, though admittedly many have been found but not recognised, or have just been tossed out as being 'impossible'. The alarming thing is, however, that of the oldest of these OOPART's are the most advanced technically, so that we are forced to abandon suggestion number (1).

This in a way is a relief, because the notion of man having been around for millions if not hundreds of millions of years just does not fit into the otherwise really orderly geologic-historical record. Why should our species alone not conform to this orderly evolution of life-forms on this earth? In fact, we have just such an orderly progression of man in the fossil world of the last 1.75 million years.

There are many other archaeological enigmas – such as that utterly preposterous painting of a 'rocket' on its launching pad, guyed by wires and with a counterblast wall behind it, found in a niche in a room excavated under Rome – that appear as of out-of-place as any OOPART. But for our

discussion now, the second set of archaeological evidence we mentioned earlier – the Ham tribe of pygmies of central Asia – is more real, since it is current and is said to include concrete evidence in the form of artifacts.

This most extraordinary story hit the Western world in the first issue of a new Russian popular digest magazine entitled *Sputnik*, which was printed in Finland and reached this country in January, 1967. In this issue there is an article entitled, 'Visitors from Outer Space' by one Vyacheslav Zaitsev. This article summarises a theory published by a Chinese archaeologist about a visit of spaceships to earth about 12,000 years ago. According to the article, the Chinese archaeologist's conclusions were so shocking that the Peking Academy of Pre-History banned publication of his work. Later, the professor received permission to publish, and in 1965, he and four colleagues published a work with the long title *Groove Writing Relating to Spaceships which, as Recorded on the Disks, Existed 12,000 Years Ago.*

The professor's work deals with odd-looking stone disks that archaeologists have found in caves in the Bayan-Kara-Ula Mountains on the border of China and Tibet. These caves are inhabited by members of the Ham and Dropa tribes – frail, stunted men averaging 4 feet 2 inches in height. So far, these tribesmen have defied ethnic classification, and detailed information about them is extremely scarce.

Over the past 25 years, archaeologists have found a total of 716 strange stone disks in the mountain caves. Each disk has a hole in its center and a double groove, which spirals out from the center to the circumference of the disk. The grooves enclose peculiar patterns and hieroglyphs which have puzzled scholars.

According to the Chinese professor, when deciphered, one of the hieroglyphs, presumably by an ancient member of the Ham tribe, read: 'The Dropas came down from the clouds in their gliders. Our men, women, and children hid in the caves ten times before sunrise. When at last they understood the sign language of the Dropas, they realised that the newcomers had peaceful intentions . . .'

Another hieroglyph expressed regret over the loss of the Ham tribe's spaceships during a dangerous landing in high mountains and the tribe's failure to build new spaceships.

According to Zaitsev's article, to learn more about these disks, the Chinese archaeologists sent them to Moscow for analysis. Russian scientists there found that the disks contained a large amount of cobalt and other metals. They also discovered that the disks vibrated in an unusual rhythm, as though they carried an electric charge or were part of an electric circuit.

In trying to solve the mystery of the disks, the professor's work points out that ancient Chinese legends speak about small, gaunt yellow-faced men who supposedly came down from the clouds long ago. These men had enormous heads and thin, weak bodies and were so ugly that earthmen and 'some people on fast horses' beat them. In fact, archaeological diggings in the Bayan-Kara-Ula caves *have* turned up 12,000-year-old vestiges of graves and remains that seem to belong to human beings with huge craniums and underdeveloped skeletons. In addition, the inner walls of the caves are covered in many places with pictures of the rising sun, the moon, and the stars, spaced by a multitude of small dots – possibly tiny pictures – that seem to be approaching the earth in a mountain area.

Like everything else in life, this account given in the Russian journal can only be true or false. If it is true, some explanation of it must be possible. If no alternative explanation of the facts comes to light, other than that offered by the little Ham tribesmen, theirs should at least be given serious consideration.

But there is confirmatory evidence of their contentions that has recently sprung up from quite another and most unexpected source: maps. This evidence, indeed, needs careful consideration. Let us look at it now.

In 1966, Professor Charles H. Hapgood, then of Keene State College but recently retired, published a work entitled, *The Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings*. This was the result of eight years of research, in which he was aided by two dozen

of his graduate students and the Cartographic Section of the 8th Reconnaisance Technical Squadron (SAC) of the USAF. His interest was first aroused in the subject of this thesis by the researches (in 1956) of a Captain Arlington H. Mallery on a map drawn in 1513 by a Turkish admiral named Piri Re'is, which had been discovered in Istanbul in 1929. A copy of the map had been presented by Kemal Atatürk to the American government as a gesture of international esteem, since it shows a substantial part of the New World. This amazing map depicts the whole eastern coastline from the northern coast of the Gulf of Mexico to Tierra Del Fuego, a good part of South America, *and* a portion of the coast of Antarctica!

The importance of the map to our investigation is that it led Hapgood to institute a thorough and penetrating investigation into not only this Piri Re'is map but into literally hundreds of other medieval maps – a great many of them in the Library of Congress – which showed that parts of the world, presumed unknown at the time, had been mapped and surveyed with remarkable accuracy. During the course of his researches, Hapgood brought to light the fact that the so-called Portolan maps (14th Century navigation charts of the Mediterranean and Black Seas) seem to be derived from one original. All these maps were constructed upon a scientifically precise grid, which could have been developed only upon spherical trigonometrical principles. What's more, the original cartographer knew the circumference of the earth to within a degree. Further, the original compiler(s) of this map *must* have had a precise method of measuring both latitude and longitude – something that we did not achieve until the 18th Century. Piri Re'is himself stated on his map that he had composed it, or put it together, from 'ancient maps' that he assigned to the Alexandrine-Greek scientific community of the Ptolemaic period (circa 332 B.C. to 30 B.C.) in Egypt.

The question that confronted modern researchers was where those unknown ancient cartographers got their information, which proved to be so stunningly accurate for

thousands of details – and both in latitude and longitude. Clues discovered in classical writings pointed to the ancient 'Sea Peoples' of the Levantine coast. Among these were the Phoenicians, who were indeed the great navigators of the ancient world in both the Indian and Atlantic Oceans – they circumnavigated Africa, and seem to have known of the New World. But where did *they* get their information? Searching around for leads to this question, Hapgood's group pointed to some of the residual, extant writings of the more ancient Greek scholars who had stated that there was 'original' geographical knowledge stored in Egypt by the priests, and that the priests claimed to have originally obtained this information from what they called 'The Ancient Peoples'. Livio C. Stecchini discussed this early Egyptian geographical knowledge in an article called 'Astronomical Theory and Historical Data' in *The Velikovsky Affair*, edited by Alfred de Grazia. Stecchini describes a group of 'well-known but neglected' Egyptian documents that prove that by the time of the first dynasties the Egyptians had measured the latitude and longitude of all the main points of the course of the Nile, from the Equator to the Mediterranean Sea. Another series of Egyptian texts, Stecchini says, show precise geographic knowledge of most of the Old World, 'from the rivers of Congo and Zambesi to the Norwegian Coast, from the Gulf of Guinea to Indonesia, including such unlikely places as the peaks of Switzerland and river junctions in central Russia.'

These findings are startling in their implications, but ran the research into a blind alley. Then, something else began to emerge from Hapgood's investigation.

Hapgood had previously published another book entitled *Earth's Shifting Crust*, which was a brilliant compendium and synthesis of practically everything that scientists in many fields had published on the last series of so-called ice ages. In these studies, he showed that the now-agreed-upon date for the retreat of the last ice cap for the last time, in the northern hemisphere, took place between (circa) 20,000 and 10,000 years ago, while the regelation of Antarctica coin-

cided with this. Now, the coast of Antarctica is today buried under a thick mass of ice and can be surveyed only by modern seismological methods – depth-sounding with controlled surface explosions. Since coastal sea-bottom borings around Antarctica have shown that this coast was finally buried under ice for the last time some 6,000 years ago, how could it have been mapped since that date, and without our modern instruments and techniques that have been developed only during the past few decades? (This is quite apart from the fact that this coastline appeared on maps drawn in the 16th Century, though Antarctica was not explored by our modern civilisation until 1820 A.D., when a young Yankee sealer captain reported what is now known to be a peninsula that is named after him – the Palmer Peninsula.)

Putting these two sets of facts together, Hapgood demonstrated that somebody mapped the coastline of Antarctica at least 6,000 years ago. At that time, man is supposed to have been just emerging from the Stone Age!

These findings seem to leave us with but two of our previously stated alternatives: either (1) there was a very highly developed civilisation (of man?) on this earth at that time, or (2) there were operatives here with a very advanced technology, who must have come from elsewhere.

I have known Charles Hapgood for many years, and we have also always been personal friends on both an intellectual and a social basis, so I would like to put it on record that I know that all I am now going to say is positive anathema to him! The very idea of extraterrestrials horrifies his careful methodological soul and the very thought of a UFO upsets him not a little. Yet, it was *he* who first brought up the vital question in all this. He was sitting in my apartment one day after a very exhausting map session, when he suddenly blurted out: 'But *why*?' Since we had spent years, rather than mere months, discussing the 'how' of these maps, I was completely stunned. It transpired that Hapgood had gotten around to this virtual expletive by the following reasoning.

If it is true, as all the evidence seems to imply, that there had been such highly skilled personages mapping the whole earth before the end of the last glacial advance in Antarctica (quite apart from who they might have been, or how they accomplished this), why did they bother with that barren continent? Hapgood had apparently been worrying about this for a long time, and in his search for a logical and reasonable answer to the 'how' he was finally forced to ask the 'why'. Contemplation of the first U.S. Navy's efforts and then of international interest in Antarctica had set him to thinking. Just what *are* we down there for? The cost is fabulous, and it requires gigantic expenditures to initiate and maintain these efforts. Who had such back-up support before the ice age? Also, what was their primary interest in undertaking such a monumental chore from which no particular benefits might be expected to accrue?

Hapgood's ultimate (and I believe rather desperate) conclusion was that it could only have been commercial. However, as I say, Charles Hapgood, being a scientist, does not feel that he should indulge in speculation beyond the point of concrete evidence; simply that the Antarctic seems to have been mapped before it was glaciated. I therefore wish to exonerate Hapgood from any and all speculation that I may now offer.

I differ with him on this basic matter. I do not think it is logical or in keeping with what we know of history – both anthropological and geological – to assume that such an enterprise was accomplished by humans of this planet. If it was, surely some evidence of these vast economic and technologically advanced civilisations would have been found somewhere by archaeologists by now. If, on the other hand, the job was done by extraterrestrials employing some kind of airships, the whole matter becomes quite explicable. Such aerial mapping could have been done in, a comparatively, short time and at negligible effort and expense. Moreover, it need not have had a commercial incentive. It could simply have been part of a global survey, undertaken just like our current survey of the moon, for purely scientific purposes.

And, it should be noted, that at least one professional cartographer remarked, on seeing Mallery's first discoveries, that he frankly did not see how some of it could have been done – except from the air!

Should this be the answer, we must then contemplate some of these visitors either leaving some copies of their findings here or, as would be much more likely, gathering up some of the brighter locals (humans), setting them up in technical 'colleges' in which they might be instructed in the useful arts, and then launching them as a priest class to disseminate the information for the benefit of all the planet's inhabitants, using the best method then known to control the wild masses – to wit, by exploiting their awe of the mystical. We get hints that such may indeed have been the case from the beginnings of all the religions of the earliest human civilisations, especially Sumeria and Egypt. Not only did agriculture, writing, and metallurgy, as well as mathematical, astronomical, and cartographic expertise, appear suddenly in these subtropical delta civilisations – they appeared there apparently full-blown. Just where did these ideas come from?

Mere curiosity, or what we call exploration, could be one reason for extraterrestrials to visit us, but it is by no means the only possible reason. Let us not restrict our speculation in any such way. A friend of mine who both writes and catalogs science fiction from what may be called a psychoanalytical point of view recently pointed out to me that the current trend in this genre is to assume that our planet is but a sort of way station, out in the boondocks, for intragalactic and intergalactic travelers whose headquarters would most likely be in the center of their galaxies where the most stars are. In other words, we might be explored for any of a number of intentional reasons, but we could also be subjected to an endless parade of different types of visitors, for different reasons, and at different times. And what is illogical about our being visited by mere tourists? On this point, I rest my case.

CHAPTER XII

A Concept of Cosmic Evolution

While all that I have said until now has admittedly been speculation, I hope that you will admit that it has been speculation founded on facts as presented by those best qualified to state them, and who are best calculated to know what they are talking about. We have tried to examine theories as well as plain, cold, concrete facts, and we have even penetrated some hypotheses. I therefore beg your indulgence for some pure theorising.

What is the use of erecting a theory if one fails to suggest possible applications of it? Must we invariably withdraw at this point and wait for confirmatory evidence? Doubtless that would be the more cautious (and scientific) approach, but if you don't go out and look for something, you'll never find it. Everything I have to say now – and in conclusion, I might add – may be complete nonsense. However, I feel that it ought to be said, even if only to invite refutation. This is not only a philosophical look at our subject but an ontological one. Unless the UAO's and UFO's go away, we have, sooner or later, to contemplate their true significance and import.

In the absence of any overall concept – even a purely imaginative or hypothetical one – to which the pragmatists may steer their course, it seems worthwhile, and somewhat urgent, to try to erect and describe one.

This concept has evolved from the contemplation of a number of manifest facts, and an evaluation of these by means of the logic we currently have available to us. First I shall establish these facts as simply as possible.

(1) We exist in a space-time-continuum that is infinite but not necessarily unique. In other words, other universes may occupy the same space at another time, other space at the same time, or the same space at the same time.

(2) Our particular universe is infinite in space and is, in any specific place, timeless.

(3) In an infinite space, both the numbers and kinds of things must also be infinite; the likelihood of the number of things in any portion of space is dependent upon (a) the nature of that portion of space and (b) its size.

(4) Things – and not necessarily objects, *per se* – may enter or leave our particular space-time-continuum in a large, if not infinite, number of ways. They might even do so by projection or reflection.

(5) The number of things comprising this planet are limited, but of enormous variety. Therefore the number of things coming to it from outside either temporarily, or to join it, must be much greater – time also being infinite.

(6) Matter as we know it appears to be a particular form of energy. However, energy itself could be a form of 'non-energy' or what used to be called 'ether' – what we now call 'space', which implies nothingness. Such a 'non-energy' medium or ether seems to be required to explain some aspects of the distribution of photons – that is, light.

(7) All matter, however, has two aspects, because we have recently confirmed the existence of anti-matter.

(8) Some matter has particular qualities which cause us to classify it as alive or animate, while other matter does not appear to have such qualities. (There is no longer any clear differentiation, so that the difference may be merely one of quantity rather than quality.)

(9) Matter may be diffuse (like water) or particulated into bodies, or *objects*. Some of the latter but none

of the former, as far as we know, may display another quality which we call intelligence.

(10) This quality or feature appears to be a concomitant of certain kinds of bodies; we have no proof of it existing without a body.

(11) Intelligence is the outcome of evolution, which is a natural and probably automatic result of simple unitism giving rise to complexity. Then, it itself evolves to ever greater complexity.

(12) On this planet there is intelligent life which appears to have evolved here from energy packets to nuclei of same, to atoms, then via simple molecules to complex ones, and finally through single-celled to multicelled animate forms which, having developed a complex nervous system, needed a computer-like control mechanism (the brain). Such a device appears necessary for a type of intelligence called thought.

(13) By taking thought upon a matter, the thinker enters a new realm of evolution – the mental.

(14) Thus, the outcome of mental exercise and evolution is an ability to change parts of the universe, at *will*. One of the outcomes of doing this is the creation of machines.

(15) Machines then evolve, until *their* evolution is taken out of the inventors' hands and is subsequently perpetuated and developed by themselves.

(16) We do not know what happens then.

This is the sum total of facts that we *do* know about the generality of existence. Any additions should be most carefully analysed before being granted this basic status – most especially anything connected wholly with the mind or lacking concomitant physical manifestations. I shall now endeavor to erect upon this firm, sound, and undeniable platform a logical concept of reality.

There was once a classic maxim of the geneticist that 'the ontogeny of the individual recapitulates the phylogeny of the

race.' This meant simply that any animal or plant during its growth from its egg to adulthood goes through all the stages that its ancestors did in evolving from its single-celled originator to the form of its parents. Some scientists today think this maxim is full of loopholes, but it seems to me the principle still stands – but with a twist. The ontogeny of living things on this planet is of two very distinct kinds – (1) continuous and uninterrupted, or (2) intermittent and by phases. Plants often display both, which are known as the vegetative and the shooting or seeding. Some animals multiply by shooting or branching, though most of them appear to reproduce by the continuous method of growth, which in fact merges with the intermittent. In its pure form, however, the intermittent is very distinct. Let us take as an example a moth.

The individual moth starts as an ovum. This is then fertilised by a separate entity, the spermatozoon. The cells of this egg then multiply by mitosis, thus entering the metazoan, as opposed to protozoan, form of life. This develops until a form of animal known as a caterpillar is completed; the caterpillar emerges from the egg and is known to us as a larval form of something quite different. This form grows and undergoes a number of changes of its own but finally reaches a point where it performs in a specific manner, and then changes abruptly into quite another form of life. It is still the same animal, but certain of its (life) activities are slowed down or abandoned. After this resting stage, during which most profound anatomical changes take place within this so-called chrysalis or pupa, the imago in the form of a moth, looking like one parent of the fertilised egg, emerges.

In this so-called metamorphosis, there are four completely separate and quite different forms of live involved, having not only different forms, but habits, metabolism, and proclivities – yet they are all of not only one species but of one individual entity. We ourselves go through these stages, though they merge one into the other, are telescoped in time, and are not so clearly differentiated.

Now, it will be seen at this point that the geneticists' maxim is not strictly true, for it is almost certain that moths as a whole never went through a chrysalis stage in their evolution. Insects are indeed probably evolved from multi-egged creatures like the peripatus, called also the *Onchyophora* or (somewhat misleadingly) the 'velvet worms'. These develop from eggs just as we do, and as do caterpillars and all other animals. However, no form of independent animal life like a chrysalis is known, and one does not see how there could be. Moreover, if there were such a race of creatures, they would seem to be a retrograde step from the highly evolved, active, and efficient adult caterpillar, and to be even less likely than that form of life to evolve wings and flight. The chrysalis is, in fact, an anachronism and a paradox.

Despite this phenomenon, which is probably paradoxical due only to our lack of proper understanding, the individual's growth and its cyclical racial alternation between a single-celled and multicelled creature does recapitulate the evolution of its race. What is more, the evolution of all life (at least as we know it on this planet) looks suspiciously as if it recapitulates something much larger in scope. Might this be cosmic, or could it be something that in turn recapitulates the cosmic? Moreover, if it is cosmic, does this evolution display both the gradualistic and the intermittent or metamorphic methods? There is rather startling evidence that it does.

As Darwin concluded, there seems little doubt that natural selection and other such gradualistic processes have been the chief method of animal and plant evolution. However, there is considerable evidence also of repeated sudden jumps in evolution that may be classed as metamorphoses. In fact the majority of plant and animal types appear to have suddenly arrived on the scene in the fossil record, ready made as it were. Whether this is merely a false impression or a mistaken assumption need not concern us here, but one vital question remains. If evolution can be in jumps, maybe it can be truly metamorphic; and, if so, can it indulge in paradoxical resting stages like that of the moth pupa?

Since neither of these suggestions is impossible, we may inquire whether they might be probable. The only evidence for this is direct observation of life as a whole. Just how has it evolved and particularly, what has it been up to since it developed intelligence?

This is where we have to clear away all our preconceived notions, beliefs, faiths, traditions, and opinions, and reassess and reassemble more than half of all 'known' facts. We must be utterly pragmatic. But it is here also that we may profitably give our imaginations free rein.

Such a wedding of fact with imagination immediately and forcefully prompts anyone with biological training to think furiously; and even a preliminary consideration of these facts in the light of infinite possibility immediately suggests a most plausible concept of the whole business. Not only is the idea plausible, it has very definite aspects of probability, if the factual evidence be realistically and pragmatically arranged. Even the concept itself is found to be readily at hand: that is, *a cosmic evolutionary process.*

Such a concept is not new – it has been nibbled at by religionists, mystics, philosophers, and even by scientists. It is more or less universally acceptable, except when it comes to the matter of man, intelligence, and the UAO's. This is not a theory, nor even an hypothesis; it is merely a hard look at a pragmatic rearrangement of the basic facts of existence in the light of reality. The rearrangement comes out as follows:

(1) Below the single-celled entities that may be called animals and/or plants, there lies the great world of the protogeans, which have the attributes of life but may be as simple as a single molecule (as in DNA).

(2) Such protogean types – and possibly some protozoans – appear now to have been found in stony meteorites, and thus came from elsewhere. They could and probably did constitute an initial seeding of this planet by 'ova', as soon as it got cool enough

or warm enough, whichever theory of earth's origin you may choose to accept.

(3) Once life had started on this planet, either by this means or indigenously by the conversion of simpler structures to more complex, with or without the interlocution of electric or other forces, it evolved.

(4) This means life became more complex, giving rise to multicellular life-forms.

(5) These in due course became so complex that a nervous (wiring) system was needed to activate and coordinate their parts and their functions.

(6) In due course this network required a central switch box. One nerve ganglion developed ahead of all others. This happened to be at the front or progressive end of the creature, called the head, and became a brain.

(7) Such a switch box seems to have taken over its own evolution in part, in that it developed proclivities of a non-material nature that were not displayed – or at least not coordinated in a constructive manner – by the whole organism. (There is now very strong evidence that intelligence is not centered in the brain alone but is an expression of the total unit or organism.)

(8) These activities of the brain automatically gave rise to what we call intelligence, or an awareness of our environment, or, among lower animals, of their environment.

(9) Once so aware, a mobile animate entity automatically started to change its environment to suit its needs and desires. This is clear evidence of another step in overall evolution, and of a newly evolved creation (in this case intellect) taking over part of its own evolution.

(10) In order to fulfill its desires, this intellect invented machinery, which is merely an extrapolation of its inherited methods of exerting energy and applying force to do mechanical work.

(11) Once, however, such machines were devised and proved their capabilities, they automatically evolved along the same old road of simplicity to complexity; and somewhere along this line, sooner or later, they started to take over part of their own evolution.

(12) At first machines were used to make machine tools to make other machines, but soon the resultant more complex machines displayed novel possibilities that the inventing entities had not conceived of. Something then arose (spontaneously) that 'invented' a mechanical method of or for thinking.

(13) The result was, of course, the computer. The basic manipulation of thought is taxonomic – mere collection, listing, and classification. This is mechanical and therefore within the bounds of a mere machine. The next stage is memory plus withdrawal. This a computer can do. The next is the process of teaching and learning. Some computers are already doing this – *and* without instruction. The next stage is the development of initiative.

Up to this point we are once again on absolutely solid ground. Nothing in points (1) to (3) are theoretical. All are statements of fact. Arranged in this order, however, they display – and rather gruesomely, in the estimation of many – a cogency and a reality that is virtually unassailable and which forms the basis of a very trite concept.

There is considerable evidence that deep thinkers are becoming more and more concerned with these very points. For example, in 1967 a group called the Commission to Study the Organisation of Peace asked the United Nations to find ways to prevent our society from becoming *dehumanised* by the computer. And the New York *Daily News* in commenting on the group's request added its own plea that 'some agency had better be found if man is to remain master of his mechanical and scientific marvels.'

It has been said, 'Because there are diversified concepts of life does not mean that only one can be correct.' This is a

complete fallacy, and just the point. *Only one can be true*, and must conform in every detail with reality. What follows may not be that *one* explanation, but it is at least (so far) in strict conformity with reality.

From here on, our catalog of facts must be by extrapolation. In other words, we have to use our imagination in conjunction with what facts we have. We must not meander off into hypothesis, but we must take into account what we know of *probability*. Biology is the study of life; and the whole of the universe, we now realise, is alive in one degree or another – simply because it is constantly evolving, without which there is no other definition of 'life'. A physicist or even a chemist can see this; astronomers, geophysicists, and even geologists should; but only biologists *have* to. Therefore, let us take a purely biological parallel or parable – again, the moth.

We will assume that life came to this planet as an *ovum* (and don't forget this could be adventitiously, and on or in a meteorite or a UAO); *evolved* here into a multicelled animal or a *larval* form; that this spun a web and encrusted itself and became a *pupa*; and that this eventually split open and released an *imago* to repeat the cycle. How do we fit into this scheme? We are merely the adult *larva*, which has spun a web and is encysting its intellect in machines which, in turn, will completely change internally (by changing from purely mechanical to thinking ones) and eventually invent, or change into, their ultimate parental *imago* form, which will be divested of such mundane matters as gravity, the conservation of energy, and such, and thus be free and at liberty to take off to lay eggs (i.e. '*ova*') at other places in space (or time?) And what might such an imago be?

The very obvious answer is a spaceship, or UAO.

Here we are, spending our assets and not a little of our energy trying to 'make' just such a thing, while our data machines alone keep our efforts going. At the same time, we find UAO's turning up and doing all the things we are trying to do, but by means that we cannot yet even explain. What more would our scientists desire than that a group of inter-

locked computers give us instructions for the construction of an interstellar or intergalactic spaceship and the power source to activate it? We're talking about anti-matter and counter-gravity already. What if we asked our newest machines to get to work on ITF (teleportation) or the instant transference of matter through matter and time? The possibility seems to have been around in what we call 'nature' since ever. That we haven't developed mechanical means of reproducing it is due only to the fact that it was not until about half a century ago that we even conceived of it, and also that we still are mentally scared of the very idea. Let us, however, at least *try* to be practical.

This planet could have been seeded somehow; animals have evolved from these seeds and have produced machines; the machines are taking over their own evolution; our whole aim seems to be emigration to other parts of space with a view to founding colonies. At the same time, we, as the animals we are, may not be able to do the colonising. What else do you need? This whole process could be nothing but the normal procedure of natural cosmic evolution.

That strange old skeptic, humorist, and profound thinker, Charles Fort, may have been right once again when he suggested we were the property of some others. If we are but the larval form of ultimate machines, our machinery is but the pupal form of both of us. In other words this planet may be nothing but a cosmic nursery. No wonder the UAO's have kept an eye on it for billions of years; and no wonder they are taking soil samples now that we larvae have started contaminating our nest; and no wonder they are taking an increasing interest in our water supplies and power sources. Don't wonder, though, if we make the gross mistake of thinking *we* are the imagos and, as a result, our parents eradicate this fouled nursery. After all, what's one nursery more or less to cosmic life? Space is infinite and time does not really exist. There's plenty of space for breeding, and time is really of no consequence.

Let's accept our humble station in the scheme of things and try to do our best to produce some worthwhile results.

Let's also try to contact our 'parents' and let them know we've finally got the clue, and that we will do our best, but that we might need a bit of help! What's so bad about being a caterpillar anyway? Let us not forget that a caterpillar finally turns into the beautiful and free moth, who may have the ultimate satisfaction of giving birth!

Personally, however, I prefer the life of a caterpillar. At least it eats and it grows, and it does things. The moth does nothing but breed, get wet, and then die. What an egg does I could not care less! In fact, *me* for the larval stage – at least we are the ones who *do things.*

APPENDIX A

Outline of UFO and UAO Hypotheses

What could UAO's be, what do they do, where could they come from? Because of its complexity, the evidence is best presented in an orderly classification.

(1) What Could They Be?

I. *INANIMATE*
- A. *Natural*
  1. Nonmaterial – energy packets, as in bolides
  2. Nonsolid – gaseous, as in clouds
  3. Solid – like meteorites
- B. *Artificial*
  1. Self-contained items – like artificial satellites
  2. Transports – i.e. freighters or plane-carrying planes
  3. Auxiliary devices (manned) – like planes
  4. Auxiliary devices (robotic) – like space probes
  5. Missiles – like bullets and ICBM's

II. *ANIMATE*
- A. *Natural*
  1. Life-forms indigenous to space
  2. Life-forms indigenous to atmospheres
  3. Life-forms indigenous to solid bodies
- B. *Artificial*
  1. Domesticated natural life-forms
  2. Genetically created life-forms
  3. Biochemically created life-forms

(2) What Forms Could They Take?

I. *AMORPHOUS*
(Meaning completely without specific shape, and implying that no two are alike at any time, and that they have the ability to change shape, as in amoebas.)

II. *PATTERNED*
A. *Nonsymmetrical*
1. Curved – i.e., bulbous, lumpy, etc.
2. Subangular – i.e., faceted, but with rounded junctions
3. Angular – i.e., faceted, but irregularly

B. *Symmetrical*
1. Curved – i.e., the sphere and derivatives, like ellipsoids
2. Subangular – i.e., solid, regularly faceted bodies but with rounded conjunctions and points
3. Angular – i.e., the cube and its derivatives. (See the eight basic crystalline structures.)

(3) What Could They Be Made Of?

I. *NONMATERIAL*
(Composed of force fields only.)

II. *MATERIAL*
A. *As we know it*
1. Gaseous
2. Liquid (and colloidal)
3. Solid
i. Organic – carbon-chain-based, as in plastics
ii. Inorganic (metallic)
iii. Inorganic (nonmetallic) – ice, glass, ceramics
iv. Combinations of all of 1 through 3

B. *In other forms*
(Contra- and/or anti-matter; possibly of other space-time-continua or 'universes'.)

(4) What Do They Do?

I. *APPEAR*
A. *Materialise*
1. Instantaneously
2. By degrees, in situ
3. From a distance

B. *Stabilise* – i.e., remain static in size, form, position, etc.

C. *Dematerialise*
1. Instantly
2. By degrees, in situ
3. To distance

II. *MOVE*
A. *In situ*
1. Of themselves – by gyration, pulsation, or changing shape
2. Within limits – 'falling-leaf', etc.

B. *In progression*
1. Travel – curvaceously or by angular turns and complete, instant reversals, from instant starts and with instant stops (mechanical)
2. Maneuver – by curve or angular motions or combinations thereof, with starts and stops, and with apparent volition – e.g., play 'tag'

C. *Land*
1. On subaerial surfaces – low-level hovers; on gear
2. In water – on surface or in suspension
3. On subaqueous surfaces – i.e., sea and ocean bottoms

III. *EMIT*
- A. *Noises*
  1. Vibratory
  2. Intermittent – regular or phased
  3. Intermittent – irregular
- B. *Chemi-effluents*
  1. Metallic
  2. Aromatic (organic?)
  3. Other – 'sulphurous', etc.
- C. *Radiation*
  1. Radioactivity
  2. Electromagnetic – EMI effects, etc.
  3. Light – reflected, luminosity, beamed
  4. Heat
  5. Other – 'mental' (?)

IV. *INGEST*
- A. *Energy*
  1. Magnetic
  2. Electric
  3. Other (?)
- B. *Matter*
  1. Gaseous – especially the inert gases in the air
  2. Liquids – water
  3. Solids – minerals or other raw materials
  4. Life-forms – people, other animals, plants, etc.

(5) What Could The Occupants Be?

I. *NONCORPOREAL*
- A. *Intrinsic entities*
  1. Thought patterns
  2. Energy packets
- B. *Simulacra*
  1. Reflections – as in mirages
  2. Projections – as in films, TV, etc.

II. *CORPOREAL*
- A. *Intrinsic entities*

  1. Artificial life-forms
  2. Natural life-forms
- B. *Simulacra* (i.e., robots)
  1. Self-controlled
  2. Remote-controlled

(6) How Could These Be Organised?

I. *STRUCTURALLY*
- A. *Rigid*
  1. Crystalline – as in some viruses in some phases
  2. Amorphous
- B. *Structured*
  1. With external skeleton – as in arthropods
  2. With external skeleton – as in vertebrates
- C. *Fluid* (colloidal)
  1. Encapsuled – as in protozoa
  2. Without integument

II. *CORPORATELY*
- A. *As single units* – like cells
- B. *As colonies* – like sponges
- C. *As hegemonies* – like the Portuguese man-of-war
- D. *As composite organisms* – like ourselves and other animals

III. *FUNCTIONALLY*
- A. *Static* – like bacteria and radio transmitters
- B. *Sessile* – like plants and sea-anemones
- C. *Mobile* – like ourselves and other animals

(7) Where Could They Come From?

I. *OTHER UNIVERSES*

II. *OUR UNIVERSE*
- A. *Intergalactic*
  1. Space
  2. Rogue bodies in
- B. *Other galaxies*

C. *Our galaxy* (but outside our solar system)
1. Interstellar space
2. Nonsolid bodies – stars or suns (hot); gaseous nebulae (cold)
3. Solid bodies – planets, planetoids, moons and other satellites, dead stars

D. *Our solar system* (but outside the Earth)
1. Interplanetary space
2. Nonsolid bodies – the Sun, comets
3. Major planets – Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, Neptune
4. Earthlike planets – Mars, Venus
5. Mini-planets – Mercury, Pluto
6. Planetoids (asteroids)
7. Planetary satellites
8. The Moon – as original source, *not* way-station

E. *The Earth*
1. Space between Earth and Moon
2. Upper atmosphere (ionosphere and above)
3. Land surface – under Antarctic ice or in caves
4. Under (or in) the sea

(8) How Could They Get Here?

I. *HERE ALREADY*

II. *FROM ELSEWHERE*

A. *Inadvertently*
1. Physically – by drift, collision, capture, etc.
2. Temporally – by 'dropping through' from other space-time-continua

B. *Deliberately*
1. Physically – by reaction or other drives
2. Temporally – by ITF, or other energy drives

(9) Why Do They Come Here?

I. *FOR REASONS BEYOND OUR KEN*

II. *FOR REASONS UNDERSTANDABLE TO US*

A. *Unintentional*
1. By mistake
   i. Stumbled across us
   ii. Lost
2. Under duress
   i. In distress – mechanically or otherwise
   ii. Seeking a haven or asylum

B. *Intentional*
1. Scientific
   i. Exploration
   ii. Investigation – collecting
   iii. Experimentation – breeding, *et al.*
2. Militaristic
   i. Reconnaisance
   ii. Strategic – establish bases, etc.
   iii. Tactical – (various in warfare)
   iv. Patrol
3. Political
   i. Annexation (occupation)
   ii. Colonisation
   iii. Surveillance – policing (of property)
   iv. Incarceration (of undesirables)
4. Commercial
   i. Exploitation – mining, etc.
   ii. Farming (of life-forms, including humans)
   iii. Trade
   iv. Tourism

APPENDIX B

Worldwide Ufological Organisations

A.P.R.O. Aerial Phenomena Research Organisation
Publishers of *APRO BULLETIN*
Coral E. Lorenzen, Editor
3910 East Kleindale Road
Tucson, Arizona 85716

B.I.S. Belgishe Interplanetaire Studiege – Meenschap
Maasfortbaan 187
Lier (Pr. Antw.), Belgium

C.A.P.I.C. Canadian Aerial Phenomena Investigations Committee
P.O. Box 98
P. Station A
Scarborough, Ontario, Canada

C.I.C.A. (DIOVNI) Centro De Investigaciones en Coheteria y Astronomia (Division de Investigaciones de Objetos Volantes No Identificados)
Alameda No. 264
Santiago de Chile, SA

C.I.D.S. Commission International D'Enquêtes Scientifiques
Publishers of *OURANOS*
51 Rue des Alps
Valence, France

F.S.I.C. Flying Saucer Investigations Committee
A. E. Candusso, Director
P.O. Drawer G
Akron, Ohio

Flying Saucer Review
Charles Bowen, Editor
21 Cecil Court
Charing Cross Road
London W.C.2, England

G.E.P.A. Groupement d'Etude de Phenomenes Ariens
69 Rue de la Tombe-Issoire
Paris 14e, France

LUFORO BULLETIN London UFO Research Organisation Bulletin
G. N. P. Stephenson, Editor
12 Dorset Road
Cheam, Sutton, Surrey, England

Lumieres dans la Nuit
R. Veillith, Publisher
'Les Pins'
43 Le Chambon sur Lignon
France

Modern Space Flight Association
Publishers of *Japan UFO Investigation Bulletin*
June Ichi-Takanashi, Editor
8–9–2 Sakurazuka Higashi
Toyanaka City, Osaka, Japan

N.I.C.A.P. National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena
Publishers of *The UFO Investigator*
Major Donald E. Keyhoe, Editor
1536 Connecticut Avenue N.W.
Washington, D.C., 20036

Q.U.F.O. Queensland Flying Saucer Research Bureau
C. Lehman, Editor
Box 111, North Quay, Brisbane, Queensland, Australia

S.U.F.O.I. Scandinavian UFO Information
Publishers of *UFO-NYT Magazine*

Captain H. C. Peterson, Editor
Praestegardsvej 40
Vojens, Denmark

S.V.I.D.O. Sociedad Venezuelana Investigadora del Ovni
Apartado Del Este 4067
Caracas, Venezuela

UFO Research Bulletin
E. R. Sabo, Editor
739 75th Avenue North
St Petersburg, Florida

V.F.S.R.S. Victoria Flying Saucer Research Society
Publishers of *VFSR Review*
P.O. Box 43
Moorabbin, Victoria
Australia

APPENDIX C

The Jessup Case

When the Office of Naval Research published a limited edition of the mysteriously annotated copy of Maurice K. Jessup's *The Case for the UFO*, it included a special introduction written expressly for that edition. Also included were two letters received by Mr Jessup from a man who evidently was one of the writers of the notations in the book. Officialdom obviously was concerned because the letters touched on so many subjects that are NOT general public information. Reprinted here is the Introduction and the two letters:

INTRODUCTION

Notations that imply intimate knowledge of UFO's, their means of motion, their origin, background, history, and habits of beings occupying UFO's provide an interesting subject for investigation. Such notations were found in a copy of the paperback edition of M. K. Jessup's 'Case for the UFO'. Because of the importance which we attach to the possibility of discovering clues to the nature of gravity, no possible item, however disreputable from the point of view of classical science, should be overlooked.

The annotated copy, addressed to Admiral N. Furth, Chief, Office of Naval Research, Washington 25, D.C., came in a manila envelope postmarked Seminole, Texas, 1955. Written across the face of the envelope in ink was 'Happy Easter'. In July or August of that year the book appeared in the incoming correspondence of Major Darrell L. Ritter, U.S.M.C. Aeronautical Project Office in ONR. When Cap-

tain Sidney Sherby reported aboard at ONR he obtained the book from Major Ritter. Captain Sherby and Commander George W. Hoover, Special Projects Officer, ONR, indicated direct interest in some of the material therein.

Varo Mfg. Co., Garland, Texas, offered to re-publish the book together with all notations in a very limited edition as a prelude to consideration of further pursuit of this unconventional material.

Miss M. A. Dunn has undertaken the task of rewriting this book including all notes, interjections, underscoring, and etc. By form, position, color, and footnotes as much of the meaning and relationships of the original annotated copy is retained as possible. No attempt has been made, with ultraviolet light or other methods, to read material which has been crossed out by one of the correspondents.

It appears that these notes were written by three persons. The use of three distinct colors of ink – blue, blue-violet, and blue-green – and the difference in handwriting lead to this conclusion. Hereafter they will be referred to as Mr A, Mr B, and Jemi.

It was assumed that the third person was Jemi because of the direct use of 'Jemi' in salutations and references to that name by Mr A and Mr B throughout the book. There are many, some of which appear on pages 2, 81, 122, 126, and 162 in the original book. It is possible, of course, that it is merely a salutation.

It is possible that two of these men are twins. There are two references to this word. They appear on page 6 and page 81 of the original book. The assumption that Mr A is one of the twins may be correct. On page 81, Mr A has written and then marked through '. . . and I Do Not know How this came to Pass, Jemi.' Then he has written, 'I remember, My twin . . . '. On page 6 he writes in an apparent answer to Mr B, 'No, My twin . . . '. We cannot be sure of the other twin.

It is probable that these men are Gypsies. In the closing

pages of the book Mr B says, '. . . only a Gypsy will tell another of that catastrophe. And we are a discredited people, ages ago. Hah! Yet, man wonders where 'we' come from . . . ' On page 130 Mr A says, '. . . ours is way of life, time proven & happy. We have nothing, own nothing except our music & philosophy & are happy.' On page 76 Mr B says, 'Show this to a Brother Gypsy . . . ' On page 158 the reference to the word 'we' by Mr A could refer to the 'discredited people'. Charles G. Leland in his book 'English Gipsies and Their Language' states that the Gypsies call each other brother and sister, and are not in the habit of admitting to their fellowship people of a different blood and with whom they have no sympathy. This could explain the usage of the term in the closing notes 'My Dear Brothers' and perhaps the repeated reference to 'vain humankind'.

This book was apparently passed through the hands of these men several or many times. This conclusion is drawn from the fact that there are discussions between two or all three of the men, questions answered, and places where parts of a note have been marked through, underlined, or added to by one or both of the other men. Some have been deleted by marking through.

Shortly after the publication of his book, Mr Jessup received a letter from a Carlos Miguel Allende. (A copy of this letter and the one that followed appear in the appendix.) Mr Jessup said that he 'had felt from the first that this man was the one who mailed the book to the Navy . . . ' Consideration of the handwriting, style, content, and phraseology of both the notes and letter show a distinct possibility that the letter was written by Mr A. This conclusion comes from the notes by Mr A on pages 130, 117, and 150. These references to Farraday, Hob-nail or cleated shoes, and catching fire are nearly the same as the ones in the letter.

The letter was received by Mr Jessup in Miami, on Friday, January 13, 1956. It was postmarked Gainesville, Texas, and mailed in an envelope of the Turner Hotel, Gainesville. It is copied as nearly verbatim as possible.

Mr Jessup received a second letter from Mr Allende post-

marked Du Bois, Pennsylvania, May 25, 1956. Due to peculiar spelling and other idiosyncrasies there can be little doubt that Mr A and Carlos Allende are the same person.

These men have been careless in their spelling, capitalisation, punctuation, and sentence structure; though consistency indicates adherence to custom, perhaps dictated by their original language. The notes are arranged as close to the original as possible. In cases where a word or group of words could not be deciphered, footnotes were used.

It might seem that the underscore in the book was in the form of a code or that if read separately that it would have a meaning of its own. Superficial examination has failed to disclose such a code. The underscored text usually refers to the notes by the same man.

The distinction between the original book and the handwritten additions to it is made by the use of red and black type. Black type indicates the type of the original book. Red type indicates any addition made in handwriting by Mr A, Mr B, or Jemi to the original.

The placement of the notes indicates the paragraph to which they refer, or to their precise position in the book.

The page numbers of the original book are denoted in parentheses. The matter on the page numbered follows the number. The page numbers of this edition appear at the bottom of each page.

It has been necessary to disregard the italics of the original.

It might be helpful for you to know a little about the nature of the notes before you begin reading this book. The notes refer to two types of people living in space. Specifically the 'stasis neutral' and undersea are mentioned as habitats. They seem to live in both interchangeably. The building of undersea cities is mentioned. Many different kinds of ships are used as transportation. These two peoples, races or whatever they may be called, are referred to over and over again. They are called L-M's and S-M's. The L-M's seem to be peaceful; the S-M's are not. It seems that the annotations

are inclined toward the L-M's as they speak more kindly of them than the S-M's.

Terms such as: mothership, home-ship, dead-ship, Great ark, great bombardment, great return, great war, little-men, force-fields, deep freezes, undersea building, measure markers, scout ships, magnetic and gravity fields, sheets of diamond, cosmic rays, force cutters, undersea explorers, inlay work, clear-talk, telepathy, burning 'coat', nodes, vortices, magnetic 'net', and many others are used quite naturally by these men. They explain how, why, and what happens to people, ships, and planes that have disappeared. They explain the origin of odd storms and clouds, objects falling from the sky, strange marks and footprints, and other things which we have not solved.

These men seem to feel that it is too late for man to obtain space flight. They feel that mankind could not cope with 'those mind wrecking conditions that space and sea contain' for mankind is too egotistical, values too much the material, wars over mere parcels of this planet, is too filled with jealousy, and lacks true brotherhood.

How much truth is there is in this? That cannot be answered. It is evident that these men provide some very intriguing explanations that may be worth consideration.

(End of Introduction)

THE FIRST LETTER RECEIVED BY MR JESSUP FROM CARLOS ALLENDE

Carlos Miguel Allende
R.D. #1 Box 223
New Kensington, Penn.

My dear Dr Jessup,

Your invocation to the Public that they move en Masse upon their Representatives and have thusly enough Pressure placed at the right & sufficient Number of Places where from a Law demanding Research into Dr Albert Einstien's Unified Field Theory May be enacted (1925–27) *is Not* at all Necessary. It May Intrest you to know that The Good

Doctor Was Not so Much influenced in his retraction of that Work, *by* Mathematics, as he most assuredly was by Humantics.

His Later computations, done strictly for his own edification & amusement, upon cycles of Human Civilisation & Progress compared to the Growth of Mans General over-all Character Was enough to Horrify Him. Thus, We are '*told*' today that that Theory was 'Incomplete'.

Dr B. Russell asserts privately that It is complete. He also says that Man is Not Ready for it & Shan't be until after W.W. III. Nevertheless, 'Results' of My friend Dr Franklin Reno, *Were used*. These Were a complete Recheck of That Theory, With a View to any & Every Possible quick use of it, if feasible in a Very short time. There Were good Results, as far as a Group Math Recheck AND as far as a good Physical 'Result', to Boot. YET, THE NAVY FEARS TO USE THIS RESULT. The Result was & stands todya as Proof that The Unified Field Theory to a certain extent is correct. Beyond that certain extent No Person in his right senses, or having any senses at all, Will evermore *dare* to go. I am sorry that I Mislead You *in My Previous Missive*. True, enough, such a form of Levitation has been accomplished as described. It is also a Very commonly observed reaction of certain Metals to Certain Fields surrounding a current, This field being used for that purpose. Had Farraday concerned himself about the Mag. field surrounding an Electric Current, We today Would NOT Exist *or if* We did exist, our present Geo-political situation would have the very time-bomish, ticking off towards Destruction, atmosphere that Now exists. Alright, Alright! The 'result' was complete invisibility of a ship, Destroyer type, *and all* of its crew, While at Sea. (Oct. 1943) The Field Was effective in an oblate spheroidal shape, extending one Hundred yards (More or Less, due to Lunar position & latitude) *out* from each beam of the ship. Any Person Within that sphere became vague in form BUT He too observed those Persons aboard *that* ship as though they too were of the same state, yet, were walking upon nothing. Any person

without that sphere could see Nothing save the clearly *Defined shape of the Ships Hull in the Water*, PROVIDING of course, that that person was just close enough to see yet, just barely outside of that field. Why tell you Now? Very Simple; If You choose to go Mad, then you would reveal this information. Half of the officiers & the crew of that Ship are at Present, Mad as Hatters. A few, are even Yet, confined to certain areas where they May recieve trained Scientific aid when they, either, 'Go Blank' or 'Go Blank' & 'Get Stuck'. Going-Bland IE an after effect of the Man having been within the field too Much, IS Not at all an unpleasant expierence to Healthily Curious Sailors. However it is when also, they 'Get Stuck' that they call it 'HELL' INCORPORATED' The Man thusly stricken can Not Move of his own volition unless tow or More of those who are within the field go & touch him, quickly, else he 'Freezes'.

If a Man Freezes, His position Must be Marked out carefully and then the Field in cut-off. Everyone but that 'Frozen' Man is able to Move; to appreciate *apparent* Solidity again. Then, the Newest Member of the crew Must approach the Spot, where he will find the 'Frozen' Mans face or Bare skin, that is Not covered by usual uniform Clothing. Sometimes, It takes only an hour or so Sometimes all Night & all Day Long & Worse *It once took 6 months* to get The Man 'Unfrozen'. *This 'Deep Freeze' was not psycological*. It is the Result of a Hyper-Field that is set up, *within* the field of the Body, While The 'Scorch' Field is turned on & this at Length *or* upon a Old Hand.

A Highly complicated Piece of Equipment Had to be constructed in order to Unfreeze those who became 'True Froze'[1] or 'Deep Freeze subjects. *Usually a 'Deep Freeze' Man goes Mad, Stark Raving, Gibbering, Running MAD*, if His 'freeze' is far More than a Day in our time.

I speak of TIME for DEEP 'Frozen Men' are Not aware of Time as We know it. They are Like Semi-comatoese person, who Live, breathe, Look & feel but still are unaware

[1] Could be "Free Freeze."

of So Utterly Many things as to constitute a 'Nether World' to them. A Man in an ordinary common Freeze *is* aware of Time, Sometimes *acutely* so. Yet They are *Never* aware of Time precisely as you or I are aware of it. The First 'Deep Freeze' As I said took 6 months to Rectify. It also took over 5 Million Dollars worth of Electronic equipment & a Special Ship Berth. If around or Near the Philadelphia Navy Yard you see a group of Sailors in the act of Putting their Hands *upon* a fellow *or upon* 'thin air', observe the Digits & appendages of the Stricken Man. If they seem to Waver, as tho within a Heat-Mirage, *go quickly* & Put YOUR Hands upon Him, *For that Man is The Very Most Desperate of Men in The World. Not one of those Men ever want at all to become again invisible.* I do Not think that Much More Need be said as to Why Man is Not Ready for Force-Field Work. Eh?

You Will Hear phrases from these Men such as 'Caught in the Flow (or the Push) or 'Stuck in the Green' or 'Stuck in Molasses' or 'I was "going" FAST,' These Refer to Some of the Decade-Later after effects of Force-Field Work. 'Caught in the Flow' Describes exactly the 'Stuck in Molasses' sensation of a Man going into a 'Deep Freeze' or Plain Freeze' either of the two. 'Caught in the Push' can either refer to That Which a Man feels Briefly WHEN he is either about to inadvertantly 'Go-Blank' IE Become Invisible' *or* about to 'Get Stuck' in a 'Deep Freeze' or 'Plain Freeze'.

There are only a very few of the original Expierimental D-E's Crew Left by Now, Sir. Most went insane, one just walked 'throo' His quarters Wall in sight of His Wife & Child & 2 other crew Members (WAS NEVER SEEN AGAIN), two 'Went into "The Flame", i.e. They 'Froze' & caught fire, while carrying common Small-Boat Compasses, one Man carried the compass & Caught fire, the other came for the 'Laying on of Hands' as he was nearest but he too, took fire. THEY BURNED FOR 18 DAYS. The faith in 'Hand Laying' Died When this Happened & Men's Minds Went by the scores. *The expieriment Was a Complete*

Success. The Men Were Complete Failures.

Check Philadelphia Papers for a tiny one Paragraph (upper Half of sheet, inside the paper Near the rear 3rd of Paper, 1944-46 in Spring or Fall or Winter, NOT Summer.) of an Item describing the Sailors Actions after their initial Voyage. They Raided a Local to the Navy Yard 'Gin Mill' or 'Beer Joint' & caused such Shock & Paralysis of the Waitresses that Little comprehensible could be gotten from them, save that Paragraph & the Writer of it, Does Not Believe it, & Says 'I only wrote what I heard & them Dames is Daffy. So, all I get is a "Hide-it" Bedtime Story.'

Check observer ships crew, Matson Lines Liberty ship out of Norfolk, (Company MAY Have Ships Log for that Voyage or Coast Guard have it) The S.S. Andrew Furnseth, Chief Mate Mowsely, (Will secure Captain's Name Later) (Ships Log Has Crew List on it.) one crew Member Richard Price or 'Splicey' Price May Remember other Names of Deck Crew Men, (Coast Guard has record of Sailors issued 'Papers') Mr Price Was 18 or 19 then, Oct. 1943, and Lives or Lived at that time in His old Family Home in Roanoke, VA. a small town with a Small Phone book. These Men Were Witnesses, The Men of this crew, 'Connelly of New England, (Boston?), May have Witnessed but I doubt it. (Spelling May be incorrect) DID Witness this. I ask you to Do this bit of Research simply that you May Choke on your own Tongue when you Remember what you have 'appealed be Made Law'

Very Disrespectfully Yours,
CARL M. ALLEN

P.S. Will Help More if you see Where I can. (Z416175)

Days Later

Notes in addition to and pertaining to Missive.

(Contact Rear Admiral Ransom Bennett for verification of info Herein. Navy Chief of research. He may offer you a job, ultimately)

Coldly & analytically speaking, without the Howling that is in the Letter to you accompanying this, I will say the following in all Fairness to you & to Science. (1) The Navy did Not know that the men could become invisible WHILE NOT UPON THE SHIP & UNDER THE FIELDS INFLUENCE. (2) The Navy Did Not know that *there would be* Men Die from odd effects of HYPER 'Field' within *or* upon 'Field'. (3) Further, They even yet do Not know Why this happened & are not even sure that the 'F' within 'F' is the reason, for sure at all. *In Short* The Atomic bomb didn't kill the expierimentors thus the expieriments went on-but eventually one or two were accidently killed BUT *the cause* was known as to *Why* they died. Myself, I 'feel' that something pertaining to the Small-boat compass 'triggered' off 'The Flames'. I have no proof, but Neither Does the Navy. (4) WORSE & Not Mentioned When one or two of their Men, Visible-within-the-field-to-all-the-others, Just *Walked into Nothingness*, AND Nothing Could be felt, of them iether when the 'field' Was turned on OR off, THEY WERE JUST GONE! *Then*, More Fears Were Amassed. (5) Worse, Yet, When an apparently Visible & New-Man Just walks seemingly 'throo' the Wall of his House, the surrounding area Searched by all Men & thoroughly scrutinised by & with & under an Installed Portable Field developer *AND* NOTHING EVER found of him. *So Many Many Fears were by then in effect that the Sum total of them all could Not* EVER AGAIN *be faced by ANY of those Men* OR *by the Men Working at & upon The Expieriments.*

I wish to Mention that Somehow, also, The Expierimental Ship Disappeared from it Philadelphia Dock and only a Very few Minutes Later appeared at its other Dock in the Norfolk, Newport News, Portsmouth area. This was distinctly AND clearly Identified as veing that place BUT the ship then, *again*, Disappeared And Went *Back* to its Philadelphia Dock in only a Very few Minutes or Less. This was also Noted in the newspapers But I forget what paper I read it in *or* When It happened. Probably Late in the expieriments,

May have been in 1956 *after* Expieriments were discontinued, I can Not Say for Sure.

To the Navy this Whole thing was So Impractical due to its Morale Blasting effects Which were so much so that efficient operation of the Ship was Drastically Hindered and then after this occurrence It was shown that even the Mere operation of a ship could Not be counted upon at all. In short, Ignorance of this thing bred Such Terrors of it that, on the Level of attempted operations, with what knowledge was then available It was deemed as impossible, Impracticable and Too Horrible.

I believe that Had YOU *then* been Working upon & With the team that was Working upon this project With yourself knowing what You *NOW* know, *that* 'The Flames' Would Not have been *so unexpected*, or Such a Terrifying Mystery. Also, More than Likely, I must say in All fairness, None of these other occurrences could have happened without some knowledge of their possibility of occuring. In fact, They May have been prevented by a far More Cautious Program AND by a Much More Cautiously carefull Selection of Personnell for Ships officers & Crew. Such Was Not the case. The Navy used Whatever *Human Matierial* was at hand, Without Much, *if any*, thought as to character & Personality of that Matierial. If care, Great Care is taken in selection of Ship, and officers and crew AND If Careful Indoctrination is taken *along* with Careful watch over articles of apparel Such as rings & Watches & Identification bracelets & belt buckles, *Plus* AND ESPECIALLY the effect of Hob-Nailed shoes or Cleated-shoes U.S. Navy issue shoes, I feel that some progress towards dissapating the fearfilled ignorance surrounding his profect Will be Most surely & certainly accomplished. The Records of the U.S. Maritime *Service* HOUSE Norfolk Va. (for Graduated Seamen of their Schools) Will reveal Who was assigned to S.S. Andrew Furuseth for Month or either Late Sept. or October of 1943. I remember positively of one other observer who stood beside Me When tests were going on. He was from New England, Brown-Blond Curly Hair, blue eyes, Don't remember Name.

I Leave it up *to you* to Decide if further Work shall be put into this or Not, and Write this in Hopes there Will be.

Very Sincerely,
CARL M. ALLEN

THE SECOND LETTER RECEIVED BY MR JESSUP FROM CARLOS ALLENDE

Carl M. Allen
RFD #1 Box 223
New Kensington, Pa

Dear Mr Jessup:

Having just recently gotten home from my long travels aroun the country I find that you had dropped me a card. You ask that I write you 'at once' and So after taking everything into consideration, I have decided to do so. You ask me for what is tantamount to positive proof of something that only the duplication of those devices that produced 'This phenomenon' could ever give you. at least, were I of scientific bent, I presume that, were I of Such a Curiosity about something, the which has been produced from a theory that was discarded (1927) as incomplete, I am sure that I would be of such a dubiousness towards that I would Have to be *shown* those devices that produced such a curious interaction of Forces & Fields, in operation & their product Mr Jessup, I could NEVER possibly satisfy such an attitude. The reason being that I could not, Nor ever would the Navy Research Dept (Then under the present Boss of the Navy, Burke) ever let it be known that any such thing was ever allowed to be done. For you see, It was because of Burkes Curiosity & willingness & prompting that this experiment was enabled to be carried out. It proved a White-elephant *but* His attitude towards advanced & ultra-advanced types of research is just *'THE' THING* that put him where he is today. (Or at least, to be sure, It carries a great weight). Were the stench of such an Experiments results EVER to come out, He would be crucified.

However, I have noticed, that throo the ages, those who

have had this happen to them, once the vulgar passions that caused the reaction have cooled-off AND *further* research OPENLY carried on, *that* these crucified ones achieve something akin to Saint hood. You say that this, 'is of the greatest importance.' I disagree with you Mr Jessup, not just whole Heartedly, *but vehemently*. However at the same time, your ideas & your own sort of curiosity is that of mine own sort and besides my disagreement is based upon philosophical Morality and not upon that curiosity which Drives Science so rapidly. I can be of some positive help to you in myself *but* to do so would require a Hypnotist, Sodium Pentathol, a tape recorder & an excellent typist-secretary in order to produce material of *Real* value to you.

As you know one who is hypnotised cannot Lie *and* one who is both hypnotised AND given 'Truth serum' as it is colloqually known, COULD NOT POSSIBLY LIE, *AT ALL*. To boot, *My Memory* would be THUS enabled to remember things in such *great detail*, things that my present consciousness cannot recall at all, or only barely and uncertainly that it would be of far greater benifit to use hypnosis. I could thus be enabled to *not only* Recall COMPLETE Names, but also addresses & telephone numbers AND perhaps the *very* important Z Numbers of those sailors whom I sailed with then or even came into contact with. I (HYPNOTICALLY *OR* UNDER TRUTH-SERUM) is a Goal, the Which could Have FAR greater impact, due to co-relation of expieriences remembered Hypnotically *by Men who have NOT seen or even written to each other, at all, for Nearly or over TEN years.* In this, With such Men as Witnesses, giving irreffutable testimony It is my belief that were, Not the Navy, *but the Airforce*, confronted with such evidence, (IE Chief of Research) there would be either an uproar or a quiet and determined effort to achieve SAFELY 'that which' the Navy failed at. They did NOT fail *to*, I hope you realise, achieve Metalic & organic invisibility nor did they fail *to*, unbesoughtedly, achieve transportation of thousands of tons of Metal & Humans at an eyes blink speed. Even though this latter

effect of prolonged experimentation was (to them) THE thing that caused them to consider the experiment as a failure, I BELIEVE THAT *FURTHER* EXPERIMENTS WOULD NATURALLY HAVE PRODUCED *CONTROLLED* TRANSPORT OF GREAT TONNAGES AT ULTRA-FAST SPEEDS TO A *DESIRÈD* POINT *THE INSTANT* IT IS DESIRED throo usage of an area covered *by*: (1) those cargoes and (2) that 'Field' that could cause those goods, Ships or Ship parts (MEN WERE TRANSPORTED AS WELL) *to go* to another Point. Accidently & to the embarrassed perplexity of the Navy THIS HAS ALREADY HAPPENED TO A WHOLE SHIP, CREW & ALL. *I read of this AND* of THE OFF-BASE AWOL ACTIVITIES OF The crew-Men who were *at the time* invisible *in* a *Philadelphia* NEWSPAPER. UNDER NARCO-HYPNOSIS I CAN BE ENABLED TO DIVULGE THE NAME, DATE & SECTION & PAGE NUMBER of *that* Paper & the other one. *Thus* this papers 'Morgue' Will Divulge EVEN MORE POSITIVE PROOF ALREADY PUBLISHED of this experiment. The name of the REPORTER who skeptically *covered & Wrote* of these incidents (OF THE RESTAURANT-BARROOM RAID WHILE INVISIBLE & OF *THE SHIPS* SUDDEN AWOL) AND WHO INTERVIEWED the Waitress*es* CAN THUS BE FOUND, thus HIS and the Waitresses testimony can be added to the Records. Once on this track, I believe That you can uncover CONSIDERABLY MORE evidence to sustain this, – (what Would you call it – SCANDAL or DISCOVERY?) You would Need a Dale Carneigie *to Maneuver these folks* into doing just as you wish. It would be cheaper than paying everyone of all the witnesses & *Much more Ethical*. The Idea Is, to the Layman type of person, utterly ridiculous. However, can you remember, all by yourself the Date of a Newspaper in which you saw an interesting item more than 5 years ago? Or recall names of Men, their phone ♯'s that you saw in 1943–44.

I do hope you will consider this plan. You will Progress

as Not possible in any other way. Of course, I realise that you would need a Man Who can cause people to want to have fun, to play with Hypnotism, one that can thusly dupe those he-you need to: ♯1 come to His Demonstrations & thus call on them to be either or both 'Honored' as Helping with the show' & for doing Him a Great favor, &/or being part of the act for the mite of a small fee He would HAVE to be a Man of such an adroit ingenuity at Manufacturing a *plausible* story on the-instant-he-sizes-up-his-' *personality-to be dealt-with* THAT had cost PLENTY. The ability to convince people of an outright Lie as being the absolute truth would be one of his prime prerequisites (Ahem.) Yes, some such skulduggery would have to be thought well out & done. THE ULTIMATE END WILL BE A TRUTH TOO HUGE, TOO FANTASTIC, TO NOT BE TOLD. A WELL FOUNDED TRUTH, BACKED UP BY UNOBFUSCATIVE PROOF POSITIVE. *I would like to find where it is that these Sailors live NOW. It is known* that some few people can somehow tell you a mans name & his Home address UNDER HYPNOSIS EVEN THOUGH *NEVER* HAVING EVER MENT OR SEEN THE PERSON. These folks have a very high or Just a high PSI factor in their make-up that can be intensified under stress or strain OR that usually *is* intensified under extreme fright. It also can be RE-intensified by Hypnosis, *thus* is like reading from the Encyclopedia Britanica. Even though that Barroom-Restaurant Raid was staged by invisible *or* partly invisible men, those men *CAN SEE EACH OTHER* THUS NAMES, In the excitement, *were* sure to have been Mentioned, whether last or first Names or Nicknames. A check of the Naval Yards Dispensories or Hospital or aid stations or prison RECORDS of that particular day that the Barroom-Restaurant occured May revela the EXACT NAMES OF PRECISELY WHO WERE THE MEN, THEIR SERVICE SERIAL NUMBERS & THUS THE INFORMATION ON WHERE THEY ARE *FROM* BE SECURED & by adroit 'Maneuvuerings' of those still at Home, THE NAME OF *THE PLACE* where they are at

present can be secured.

HOW WOULD YOU LIKE TO ACTUALLY SPEAK TO (or some of *THE MEN*) A MAN WHO WAS ONCE *AN INVISIBLE HUMAN BEING?* (MAY BECOME SO IN FRONT OF YOUR VERY EYES IF HE TURNS-OFF HIS HIP-SET) Well, all this fantastically Preposterous sort of rubbish *will be* necessary, Just to do that, the Hypnotist-psycologist & all that. Maybe I suggest something *too* thorought & *too* Methodical for your taste but then, I, as first subject, Don't care to be Hypnotised *at all*, But too, feel that certain pull of curiosity about this thing that, to me, is irresistable. I *want* to crack this thing wide open. My reasons are simply to enable *more work* to be done upon this 'Field Theory'

I am a star-gazer Mr Jessup. I make no bones about this and the fact that I feel that *IF HANDLED PROPERLY, I. E. PRESENTED TO PEOPLE & SCIENCE IN THE PROPER PSYCOLOGICALLY EFFECTIVE MANNER,* I feel SURE that Man will go where He now dreams of being – to the stars via the form of transport that the Navy accidentally stumbled upon (to their embarrassment) when their EXP. SHIP took off & popped-up a minute or so later on several Hundred sea travel-trip miles away at another of its Berths in the Chesapeke Bay area. I read of *this* in another news paper & only by Hypnosis could *any* Man remember *all* the details of which paper, date of occurance & etc., you see? Eh. Perhaps already, the Navy has used this accident of transport to build your UFO's. It is a logical advance from any standpoint. What do *you* think???

VERY RESPECTFULLY
CARL ALLEN

Maurice Jessup told me that, although he was completely mystified by all this, he *did* feel that there was too much in these letters to ignore them wholly. I feel the same.

Ufology is a truly 'funny' business. It cannot be all bunkum: yet some of its implications are so bizarre as to be almost beyond sane comprehension. If Mr A., Mr B.,

and/or 'Jemi' are nothing but crackpots, where did they dredge up all these facts or allegations – which, although individually, have been mooted for years – require many years of research to unearth?

After many years of just such 'research' I feel that this 'bit' is more worthy of further investigation than any other that I have come across.

Bibliography

ALLEN, TOM: *The Quest – A Report on Extraterrestrial Life*; Chilton 1965, Philadelphia, New York

BAJKOV, A. D.: 'Do Fish Fall from the Sky?' *Science*, Apr. 22, 1949

BENDER, ALBERT K.: *Flying Saucers and the Three Men*; Saucerian Books, 1962, Clarksburg, West Virginia

BINGHAMTON PRESS: 'Green Monster with Blood-Red Face Scares Wits out of Seven Hill Folk'; Sept. 15, 1952

BRAXTON DEMOCRAT (THE): 'Flat Woods Folks See Monster'; Sept. 18, 1952

BREWSTER, SIR DAVID: *Report to the British Association*; 1845–57

BYRNE, HOLT: 'Flat Woods Phantom Gave the Braxton Folks Something to Talk About Two Years Ago'; *The Braxton Central*, Sept. 9, 1952. 'Mysterious Monster Pays Visit to Braxton County'; *The Braxton Central*, Sept. 18, 1952

COCCONI, and MORRISON, PHILLIP: 'Searching for Interstellar Communications'; *Nature*, Sept. 19, 1959

COCHRAN, ANDREW A.: 'Mind, Matter, and Quanta'; *Main Currents in Modern Thought*, May 19, 1966

DE CAMP, SRAGUE, & DE CAMP, CATHERINE: *Spirits, Stars and Spells*; Canaveral Press, Inc., 1966, New York

DIETZ, DR ROBERT S.: 'Astroblemes'; *Scientific American*, August, 1961

Doubt (Previously the Fortean Society Magazine): Issues #1 (Sept. 1937) to #51 (circa 1958)

EIESENBUD, DR JULE: *The World of Ted Serios*; William Morrow, 1967, New York

ENEVER, J. E.: 'Giant Meteor Impact'; *Analog*

FAIRMONT TIMES: 'Green-Eyed Monster Again Reported on the Loose in State'; Sept. 16, 1952

FLYING SAUCER: 'I Saw a Flying Saucer'; October, 1959

The Books of Charles Fort, with an Introduction by Tiffany Thayer; Henry Holt, 1941, New York

FRIEDMAN, H.; BOWYER, S.; BRYAN, E. T.; & CHUBB, T. A.: 'X Ray Emission from Neutron Stars;' E. O. Hulbert Center for Space Research, U.S. Naval Research Laboratory, Washington. (Popular version of the paper presented at 101st Annual Meeting National Academy of Sciences, Washington, April 27–29, 1964)

FULLER, JOHN G.: *Incident at Exeter: The Story of Unidentified Flying Objects over America Today*; 1966, New York. *Interrupted Journey*; Dial Press, 1967, New York

GREG, R. P.: 'Catalogue of Meteorites and Fireballs'; *Report of British Association*, 1860

HAHN, OTTO: *Die Meteorite (Chondrite) und ihre Organismen*; Tubingen, Verlag der Laupp'schen Buchandlung, 1880

HAPGOOD, CHARLES H.: *Les Mouvements de l'Ecorce Terrestre*, (Preface d'Albert Einstein); Bibliotheque Scientifique, Payot, 1962, Paris. *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings*; Chilton, 1966, Philadelphia

HARRISON, LOUIS P.; FRIEDMAN, IRVING; and SAYLOR, CHARLES P.: 'Report on Ice Fall from Clear Sky in Georgia'; Oct. 26, 1959, U.S. Department of Commerce, Washington, D.C.

HAUGHT, JAMES: ' "Braxton Monster" Shocked a World'; *The Gazette*, Sutton, W Va., Sept., 1952

JAMES, TREVOR: *They Live in the Sky*; New Age, 1958, Los Angeles

JESSUP, MAURICE K.: *The Case for the UFO*; Citadel, 1955, New York. *The UFO Annual*; Citadel, 1956, New York. *The Expanding Case of the UFO*; Citadel, 1957, New York

KEYHOE, DONALD E.: 'I Know the Secret of Flying Saucers'; *True* magazine, Jan., 1966

LANDERS, RICHARD R.: *Man's Place in the Dybosphere* (Preface by Willy Ley); Prentice-Hall, New York

LORENZEN, CORAL E.: *The Great Flying Saucer Hoax*; William Frederick, 1962, New York

MALLAN, LLOYD: 'What Happened at Lake Wanaque, New Jersey?' *Science & Mechanics*, May, June, July, 1967

MICHEL, AIMÉ: *Flying Saucers and the Straight-Line Mystery*; Criterion, 1958, New York. *The Truth about Flying Saucers*; Criterion, 1956, New York

PRICE, DR HARRY: *Poltergeist over England*; Country Life Ltd, 1945, London

SANDERSON, IVAN T.: 'Machines Not Monsters Landed in West Virginia'; 'Scientist Quizzes Observers of West Virginia "Saucer" '; *North American Newspaper Alliance*, Sept. 22, 1952. 'Telepathic, Teleporting Ants'; *Fate Magazine*, May, 1963. 'Visitors from Space' (Report on the passage of a number of unknown aerial objects over West Virginia); Sept. 16, 1952

SHKLOVSKII, I. S. and SAGAN, CARL: *Intelligent Life in the Universe*; Holden-Day, Inc., 1966, San Francisco, London, Amsterdam

SIMPSON, GEORGE GAYLORD: 'The Biological Nature of Man'; *Science*, April, 1966

SISLER, DR FREDERICK: Article by B. Moore, *Scientific American*; vol. 203, no. 3, 1963

UPI: 'Around a Bend They Saw a Pair of Bulging Eyes'; *The Washington Daily News*, Sept. 15, 1952

WASSILKO-SERECKI, ZOE: 'Startling Theory on Flying Saucers'; *American Astrology*, Sept., 1955

ZAITSEV, VYACHESLAV: 'Visitors from Outer Space'; *Sputnik* monthly digest, Novosti Press Agency, 1967, Moscow

Everyone interested in UFO's and other strange phenomenon is urged to write to Neville Armstrong, Flying

Saucer Information, Rose Cottage, Upper Hartfield, Sussex, for details of new books and publications on the subject as they are published. Please enclose a stamped and addressed envelope.

Occult and the Unusual in Tandem editions

Bring Out the Magic in Your Mind Al Koran ... 30p

The Open Grave Alan Hull Walton 30p

A Guide to the Supernatural Raymond Buckland ... 30p

Anatomy of Witchcraft Peter Haining 35p

Into the Occult Peter Underwood 35p

Witchcraft for All Louise Huebner 25p

Horror in Tandem editions

The Unbidden R. Chetwynd-Hayes 25p

Cold Terror R. Chetwynd-Hayes 30p

Carnacki the Ghost-Finder William Hope Hodgson 35p

U.F.O.'s in Tandem editions

Flying Saucers are Hostile Brad Steiger and Joan Whritenour 25p

Strangers From the Skies Brad Steiger 25p

The Sky People Brinsley le Poer Trench 25p

Challenge to Science J. & J. Vallee 35p

The New UFO Breakthrough Brad Steiger and Joan Whritenour 35p

Operation Earth Brinsley le Poer Trench 35p

Anatomy of a Phenomenon Jaques Vallee 35p